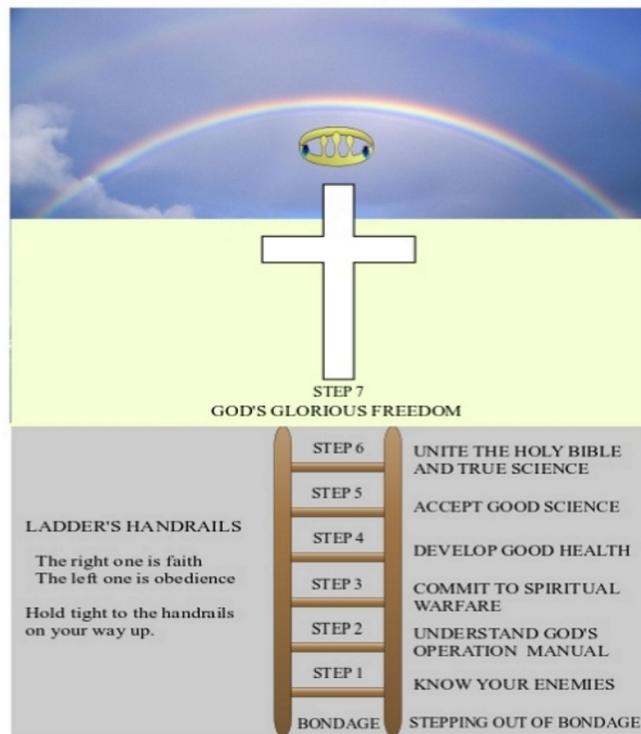


Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

7 STEPS TO GOD'S GLORIOUS FREEDOM

Focusing The Word Of Truth On The Raging Sea Of Treacherous Lies



HOWARD EUGENE WRIGHT

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

7 STEPS TO GOD'S GLORIOUS FREEDOM

Focusing the Word of Truth on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Author

Pastor Howard Eugene Wright

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

7 STEPS TO GOD'S GLORIOUS FREEDOM

Copyright © 2013 by Howard Eugene Wright.

All rights reserved solely by the author. The author guarantees all contents are original and do not infringe upon the legal rights of any other person or work. No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted by means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, without written consent from the author. The views expressed in this book are not necessarily those of the publisher.

ISBN-10: 1491006633

ISBN-13: 978-1491006634

Ministry website: www.international-lighthouse-ministries.com

Talk Show website: www.talkzone.com/shows/ChristianChannel/RiversOfLivingWater.html

DEDICATION

I DEDICATE THIS BOOK TO those people who are looking for “a reason of the hope that is in them,” **TO** all the peoples of the world, who love God and their fellow human beings, **TO** those who question the inspiration of the Christian Bible, that it may bring you to a living faith in the Lord God of Glory Who is both your Creator and Redeemer, **TO** the uplifting of people everywhere, and **TO** the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I would like to acknowledge my heartfelt gratitude to the many people who have made it possible for me to write this book on the Bible and science. To those whose works are quoted in this book, along with many who are listed in the bibliography, you have been a big help to me. To the many Christian teachers I have had at Trevecca Nazarene University and Northwest Nazarene University for helping me form a Christian world view, I say may the Lord bless you. To the teachers I have had at the University of Minnesota, who were willing to let me speak about my beliefs on special creation and the flood in my geology class422es, along with the many students who asked questions, thank you very much. To my loving mother and father who have encouraged me to do what God has led me to do, I owe a big debt. To my many Christian friends, who have encouraged and prayed for me through the years, I say, thank you. To my first wife, Arlene, a wonderful Christian who has gone to be with our Lord, for being such a big part of my desire to be everything God wants me to be, I say, till we meet again, thank you my "little buddy." To my second wife, Arlene Roller Wright, who spent hours helping me to proofread the original manuscript of this book, I give a big "thank you." Thank you to those who have make graphics available for my book's front cover. Most of all, to the LORD God of Glory, Who has given me a sound mind to understand and relate to you the concepts that are written in this book, I praise His wonderful name and give thanks.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

TABLE OF CONTENTS

TITLE: 7 STEPS TO GOD'S GLORIOUS FREEDOM 1

DEDICATION 3

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS 5

TABLE OF CONTENTS 7

PREFACE 11

THE END of rebelling against God and His Word 13

AUTHOR'S COMMENTS 15

STEP 1 - THE CHURCH THAT SATAN'S SLAVES BUILT 17

Know your enemy and how to overcome his temptations

STEP 2 - AN EXTENSIVE GUIDE TO UNDERSTANDING THE JUDEO-CHRISTIAN SCRIPTURES 63

SCRIPTURES 64

INTRODUCTION 66

CHAPTER 1 The World of the Spirit 69

CHAPTER 2 The Generations 73

CHAPTER 3 The Covenants 93

CHAPTER 4 The Law 99

CHAPTER 5 The Judges 109

CHAPTER 6 The Kings and the Kingdom 115

CHAPTER 7 The Writings of Job Through the Song of Solomon 119

CHAPTER 8 The Prophets and Their Prophecies 133

CHAPTER 9 The Savior of Lost Mankind 163

CHAPTER 10 The Gospels and the Gospel 167

CHAPTER 11 The Great Commission Call to the Church 171

CHAPTER 12 Jesus is Coming to Receive His Kingdom 175

CHAPTER 13 The Formulating of a Christian Theology 177

**STEP 3 - UNDERSTANDING THE TIMES AND SEASONS FOR
GREATER PREPAREDNESS FOR SPIRITUAL WARFARE 193**

A Call to General Repentance 194

God's Operation Manual For Spiritual Warfare 197

**STEP 4 – DEVELOPING A SOUND MIND FOR GREATER SERVICE
FOR GOD AND OTHERS 259**

INTRODUCTION 260

CHAPTER 1 The Fine Art of Sound Reasoning 261

CHAPTER 2 Basic Assumptions in Good Science Circles 275

CHAPTER 3 The Characteristics of Good Science 279

CHAPTER 4 Back to the Garden of Eden for Good Health 297

CHAPTER 5 Communicating a Christian World View 301

**STEP 5 - THE TRUTH OF GOOD SCIENCE CONTRASTED WITH THE
ILLUSIONS OF MODERN “SCIENCE, FALSELY SO-CALLED” 305**

INTRODUCTION 306

CHAPTER 1 Good Scientific Research Has Established the Truth of
Special Creation 307

CHAPTER 2 Some Good Results When Using the God-Honoring
Principles of Good Science 323

CHAPTER 3 Some Bad Results When Using the Fallacies of “Science,
Falsely So-called” 327

CHAPTER 4 How to Develop Good Science and Stay Clear of the
“Science, Falsely So-Called” Syndrome 337

STEP 6 - THE MARRIAGE OF THE HOLY BIBLE AND TRUE SCIENCE

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

**IN REVEALING GOD AS CREATOR AND REDEEMER OF THE
UNIVERSE 345**

INTRODUCTION 345

ACT I 346

- Scene 1 The Groom is True Science 347
- Scene 2 The Bride is the Holy Bible 348
- Scene 3 The Romance of the Lovers 348
- Scene 4 The Courtship of the Lovers 349
- Scene 5 The Proposal and Acceptance 350
- Scene 6 The In-laws are the Household of God 352
- Scene 7 The Out-laws are Those in the Humanist Movement 354
- Scene 8 The Minister is the Eternal God 356

ACT II 357

- Scene 1 The Marriage Ceremony 358

ACT III 360

- Scene 1 The Reception 361
- Scene 2 The Children are the Creation-Scientists 361
- Scene 3 The Family Honor 362

THE BEGINNING of a New Life in Christ Jesus 366

STEP 7 - THE CHURCH THAT JESUS BUILT 367

Developing a Loving Personal Relationship With Jesus

BIBLIOGRAPHY 409

ENDNOTES 416

AUTHOR'S BIOS 417

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

PREFACE

After some consideration, I felt the contents of my book could best be expressed by changing its title from “Deceitful Masters: The Truth About the Scientific Nature of God’s Creations the ‘Ruling Elite’ Does Not Want You to Know” to “7 Steps to God’s Glorious Freedom: Focusing the Word of Truth on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies.”

The wicked God-haters (ruling elite) are those people who are working day and night to do away with all references to God in your society and to set up a One World Government with a One World Religion. Due to the fact we are in a spiritual battle, I have added my E-books, “The Church That Man Built” (changed to “The Church That Satan’s Slaves Built”); “The Church That Jesus Built;” “A Call to General Repentance;” and “God’s Operation Manual for Spiritual Warfare” to this edition so you can be better equipped to “fight the good fight of faith.” “Called Unto Holiness or Called Unto Speaking in Tongues” has been added to address the tongues issue that is sweeping over our churches.

This edition is organized to take you into the area of revealing your enemy, followed by over 300 “keys” to understanding the Bible. This will give you a working understanding of what God requires of you. Then you are given a “Call to Repentance” and “God’s Operation Manual for Spiritual Warfare.” Then you will be shown how to think logically. After this, you will be shown the difference between good science and “science, falsely so-called.” Then follows a play picturing the “marriage” of the Holy Bible and True Science to bring glory and honor to your wonderful Creator God. Then there is a challenge for you to start a new life (The Beginning) in the Lord Jesus Christ. To do this, you are shown “The Church That Jesus Built.” There is a Bibliography. Endnotes and Author’s Bios at the end of this book.

Howard Eugene Wright
Yates Center, Kansas
August 2013

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

THE END

If you have been given to a self-centered, worldly-minded, Bible-bashing attitude, decide that from this time forward you will allow God to teach you His ways!

Before you can get out of the dungeon of spiritual bondage and at the foot of the stairs that lead you into God's glorious freedom of love, joy and peace you must change you attitude toward God and His Holy Word.

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

AUTHOR'S COMMENTS

This is not merely a book for your entertainment or curiosity. This is an action book. The purpose of this book is to give you tools that will empower you in all areas of your life to resist and to win the age-old battle raging against the Lordship of your True and Living God of Glory! Thus, you will receive the greatest benefits from it when you follow its directives in a step by step fashion.

While the church slept, the enemy sowed tares in the field. Lenin's blueprint for world domination is active in our nation today. Look at the rules listed below that he outlined for his diabolical plan for the takeover of the world and then look at what is happening all around you. To be free, you must resist these attacks against God and country anywhere you find them with a God-inspired counter-attack!

“Rule 1: CORRUPT THE NATION’S YOUTH. The future of any nation lies with its youth. So corrupt them; since religion teaches moral virtues, erode the churches and divert the young from religion. Make them interested only in themselves. Get them involved in drugs, alcohol, and sex. Get them addicted to privileges and rights.

Rule 2: CONTROL THE MASS MEDIA. Since the media shapes the minds of the people, infiltrate it and control it. Dominate television, radio, and the newspapers, and you control the minds of the people.

Rule 3: ENCOURAGE PUBLIC INDIFFERENCE. Cause the people to become disinterested in their own government and in world affairs. Get them to feel disenfranchised. Get them to ridicule and lose respect for government leaders.

Rule 4: ENCOURAGE PUBLIC BICKERING. Divide the people into hostile groups. Divide them against themselves by getting them to squabble about inconsequential social issues.

Rule 5: SEIZE POWER, THEN CENSOR. Always preach true democracy, but seize power as completely and ruthlessly as possible. Vigorously censor viewpoints that conflict with ours.

Rule 6: BANKRUPT THE GOVERNMENT. Encourage government extravagance on every front. Get the government deeply into debt. Get the people dependent on government by providing for their every need. This destroys their independence, motivation and strength.

Rule 7: DESTROY NATIONAL VALUES. Cause a breakdown of indigenous national

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

values. Destroy all tradition in preparation for the bright dawn of glorious Socialism. Ridicule religion, patriotism, and honesty. The people must be led to have only one interest: Themselves!

Rule 8: ATTACK GUN OWNERSHIP. Control or register all firearms if possible. This will make their confiscation much easier when the time comes for revolution.

Rules 9: UNDERMINE THE ARMED FORCES. Destroy the reputation of the armed forces. Cause the young men to perceive military duty as distasteful and ridiculous. Fight registration of any kind, and encourage defections within the ranks.

Rule 10: CAUSE THE PEOPLE TO DESIRE PEACE AT ANY COST. Cause them to oppose any and all their government's actions regarding the strengthening or use of their armed forces."

The "ruling class" of wicked God haters are following this program. This is a spiritual battle. Your only hope of freeing yourself from this web of destruction is to get back to God and His Word.

Another thing the "Christian" community has been guilty of is allowing the so called "ruling class" to corrupt their minds concerning God's special creations. They have allowed them to tell them how they got here and what their moral choices should be. For instance, God's "creative week" was not millions or billions of years, as they would have you to believe. He spoke and it was done. The whole material universe is less than 7000 years old. He has been re-creating His people into "new creatures in Christ Jesus" for less than 2000 years.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

STEP 1 – THE CHURCH THAT SATAN'S SLAVES BUILT

Know Your Enemy and How to Overcome His Temptations

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

THE CHURCH THAT SATAN'S SLAVES BUILT

The Babylonian Church for the "New World Order"
THE ENEMIES OF JESUS' CHURCH EXPOSED

After spending thousands of dollars in an attempt to get a book on Bible and science from a Christian point of reference out into the public arena, I realize our nation is in grave danger of apostatizing. Unless God intervenes for us, we will go the way of the other great nations of the past. We will be tossed on the trash heap of eternal silence. We will not be the great God-fearing nation that our Founding Fathers meant us to be. It is so sad to see a great nation die! I do not want this to happen. I do not know of many who do. However, our enemies are strong and we must be diligent and faithful in our witness for our Lord Jesus Christ to overcome them.

Later in this book, you will find a "Call To General Repentance" followed by "God's Operation Manual For Spiritual Warfare." "The Church That Satan's Slaves Built" shows where our Christian churches are in their near apostate state, as they have conformed to the world's system of "marketing the church" to remove the offense of the Cross of Jesus in favor of sinful man's approval. To be more specific, many of our "Christian holiness churches" are in real danger of apostatizing as they compromise their standards of holiness to gain the favor of ungodly people. A conscientious investigation of the facts will prove "beyond any shadow of a doubt" the truth of this critical analysis of the church. Furthermore, you will see how this is not a new development. It has been ongoing since Nimrod rebelled against God and the establishment of Satan's man-made church on the sands of fickle man's ungodly wickedness. "The Church That Jesus Built," shows the bond we have with the Lord Jesus Christ. It is Step 7 in this book.

There is much Scripture in this book because the Word of God is our solid foundation. My words are up for debate. God's Word stands forever. **DO NOT DEBATE GOD'S WORD!**

The following Bible verses are the foundation for this step toward freedom.

“And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar; and they dwelt there. And they said one to another, “Go to, let us make brick, and burn them thoroughly.” And they had brick for stone, and slime had they for mortar. And they said, “Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth.” And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men built. And the Lord said, “Behold, the people is one, and they all have one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. Go to, let Us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another’s speech.” So the Lord scattered them abroad from there upon the face of all the earth: and they left off building the city. Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from there did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth” (Genesis 11:1-9 ET).

“A generation: curses their father and does not bless their mother. A generation: pure in their own eyes, and is not washed from their filthiness. A generation: O how lofty are their eyes! And their eyelids are lifted up. A generation: whose teeth-swords, and their jaw teeth-knives, to devour the poor from off the earth, and the needy from men” (Proverbs 30:11-14 ET).

“Now the Spirit speaks expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils: speaking lies in hypocrisy: have their conscience seared with a hot iron: forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from foods, which God has created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth” (1 Timothy 4:1-3 ET).

“This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. “For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy. Without natural affection, truce- breakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God: having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sin, led away with divers lusts. Ever learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith. ... But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived” (2 Timothy 3:1-8, 13).

“Now we beseech you, brothers, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and our gathering together unto Him, that you be not soon shaken in mind or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand. Let no man deceive you by any means: for except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called god, or that is worshiped; so that he as god sits in the temple of God, showing himself that he is god. Do you not remember, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things? And now you know what withholds that he might be revealed in his time. For the mystery of iniquity does already work: only he who now lets, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that wicked one be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of His mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of His coming: even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, and with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: that they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness” (2 Thessalonians 2:1-12 ET).

I. The Church That Satan’s Slaves Built Is Dramatized in the Bible!

When we envision a church, we call to mind a group of worshipers. A worshiper, as defined by Webster’s dictionary, is a person or group that has, “*extreme devotion: intense love or admiration of any kind.*” In this sense, we are referring to people who devote themselves to a way of life that determines their actions and attitudes. Not all worshipers are God-respecting ones. In man’s church, man worships himself. He sets his own standards of right and wrong, and determines what is best for him. He constantly disregards God’s rightful demands on his life.

Some examples of this total disregard for God found in the Bible are:

- God told Adam and Eve not to eat of the fruit of “tree of the knowledge of good and evil:” they ate of the fruit.
- God told the people of Noah’s day after the flood, to fill the earth: they

congregated in one place.

- By the time you get to the Judges, everyone is doing that which is right in his own eyes. “And also all that generation were gathered to their fathers: and there arose another generation after them, which knew not the LORD, nor yet the works which He had done for Israel. And the children of Israel did evil in the sight of the LORD, and served Baalim: and they forsook the LORD God of their fathers, which brought them out of the land of Egypt, and followed other gods of the gods of the people that were round about them, and bowed themselves to them, and provoked the LORD to anger. And they forsake the LORD, and served Baal and Ashtaroth” (Judges 2:10-13 ET).
- God told the children of Israel not to have any other gods before Him: they worshiped everything from the stars of heaven to Baal. You might expect the people who knew nothing about God to follow a way contrary to God’s commands, but why would the Israelites want to leave their God to follow another way of life diametrically opposed to the God of their fathers? Could it be they thought God’s way was too demanding on them? Could Psalm 2:2-3 (The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against His Anointed, saying, “Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.”) be the general attitude of Satan’s Slaves church? I think this has been the general attitude of the whole human race down through the generations!

II. The Church That Satan’s Slaves Built Is Fashioned From Daniel’s Fourfold Image of the Kingdoms!

“You, O king, saw, and behold a great image. This great image, whose brightness was excellent, stood before you; and the form thereof was terrible. This image’s head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass, his legs of iron, his feet part of iron and part of clay. You saw until that a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and break them to pieces. Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain,

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

and filled the whole earth” (Daniel 2:31-35 ET).

In this vision of the image, we need to take note that the Emperor had no clothes. To cover his shameful nakedness he must be clothed in impressive garments. To do this he clothed himself with a garment borrowed from Satan’s evil trinity of the world (organized rebellion against God), the flesh (the sinful nature of man) and the devil (the god of this sinful world). You may be surprised to see how this was all masterminded and sold in a spiritual vacuum, the same as today when people totally disregard the True and Living God as revealed to us in God’s Word, the Holy Bible. (One of the main articles of faith of man’s church is to empty the mind of all rational thought, and then to accept whatever comes rushing in to fill the vacuum as a higher level of consciousness. They call this getting in touch with the universal godhood that is in all of us.) See Daniel 8:1, 2, 15-19.

A. The Babylonian Empire

Daniel 2:36-38; Daniel 7:4

The Babylonian Empire is shown as a **pure gold head** and a **lion with eagle’s wings**. It stood on its feet as a man. It was given a man’s heart. Think of this Empire as the mastermind of “Satan’s Slaves’ Church.” This Empire was founded by Nimrod, a son of Cush (Genesis 10:8, 9; 11:1- 9), who was used of Satan to assemble a rebellion against God. It roars like a lion (The devil is a roaring lion walking about seeking whom he may devour -1 Peter 5:8, 9). It flew like an eagle. That is, it soars to the heights of the heavenly realm. It stood on its feet as a man with a man’s heart. That is, it is grounded in a humanistic philosophy of life. Man would be his own god. This new religion had a counsel, a way and a seat. (See Psalm 1:1). They were building themselves a city (that walks in the counsel of the ungodly), a tower that would reach to heaven (that stands in the way of sinners) and a name (that sits in the seat of the scornful). Nimrod, in his rebellion against God, inspired a human-based social order that would deify man and humanize God. As things developed over time, man left the God of heaven and went on a downward spiral from monotheism (worshiping the one and only eternal Lord God of glory) to polytheism (worshiping many gods) to pantheism (saying god is all and all is god). Man was the center of all things. He would decide what is right and wrong for himself. Every area of life is drawn into this ungodly frame of reference when a person accepts the roars coming out of the mouths of its lions of

illogical sciences, brutal philosophies and false religions. In their sad state of being captivated by reprobate minds, all is good because all is god and god is good. Naturally, this left people without the need for a Savior, seeing everything is thought to be “getting better.” In their way of thinking, man is a little god—seeing God and nature is one in the same. As they scattered out into the entire world they took their polytheistic and pantheistic religions with them. These are still the overriding religions of most of the people on earth today. Read Romans 1:17-32 for a Biblical explanation of their sad state of affairs. As we will see later, the “Jewish” and “Christian” Churches have been corrupted by this religion in various forms and degrees throughout the centuries.

B. The Medeo-Persian Empire

Daniel 2:39a; (Daniel 7:5; Daniel 8:3, 4, 20)

This Empire is pictured as the **breast and arms** of the naked human statue made of **silver**. It was also pictured as a **bear raised on one side with three ribs in its mouth** and a **ram with two horns** pushing westward, northward and southward. One horn was higher than the other.

Silver will tarnish when it is left to the elements. It must be polished to keep its luster; likewise, with “The Church That Satan’s Slaves Built.” It will not hold together if it is not given a good “bill of sale.” You must keep polishing it to make it look good. The main thing this Empire did was keeping “man’s church” polished. It gave it a heart and soul. It gave it breath. It pumped the corrupted “life-blood” into the whole body of this young religion. It breathed in the air of the religious atmosphere around it. It nourished itself on the whole naturalistic body of faith of its own creation. In this age of history, “Satan’s Church” became more organized. New “prophets” sprung up and started building the superstructure of this worldly church. It had a beastly nature that could be either like a bear or like a ram. The Persian side of the empire was greater than the Medea side. Thus, the bear was raised on one side and one horn of the ram was higher than the other. The three ribs between its teeth showed it had unlimited power to conquer all its foes. Nothing could stand up against it. It pushed outward toward the western, northern and southern frontiers as it gorged itself on its newly conquered territories. It had great success as it devoured everything that tried to stop it.

C. The Greek Empire

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Daniel 2:39b; Daniel 7:6; Daniel 8:5-8, 21, 22

This Empire is the **belly and thighs** of the naked image. It is also pictured as a **leopard with four wings of a fowl and four heads**. It is also a **he goat**, which locked horns with the Medeo-Persian Empire and replaced it. This is the Greek Empire. This part of the image is brass. Brass has the color of gold, but tarnishes like silver. Internal corruption of this Empire turns out to be its downfall. The he goat's great horn was Alexander the Great. When he died of natural causes, four of his generals took his kingdom to the four corners of the Earth. Most everyone knows about the Greek philosophers. Furthermore, the Greek mythologies are common knowledge. This is the "guts" of "The Church That Satan's Slaves Built." Now it is beginning to take shape. Before now, this image had no feet. It was somewhat confined. This would be overcome in the next Empire. If you are interested in finding out more about the Greek Empire, you can explore the Internet for more information.

D. The Roman Empire

Daniel 2:40-43; Daniel 7:7, 19, 23

We now go to the **legs and feet** of the naked image. It is also exhibited as a **dreadful, terrible beast** that has ten horns with nails of brass and teeth of iron. The feet are part iron and part potters clay.

Man's church has the appearance of being human, but in reality, it is a beast. It seeks to destroy everything that gets in its way. The Roman Empire is now the finished product of the Devil's masterpiece. A dreadful beast will devour its enemy without showing any mercy. The Romans had some of the most terrible ways of executing criminals known to man. Crucifixion is well known. The others were cutting off your head or tying the victim's dead body on its murderer until the dead flesh decomposed him. The Emperor was worshiped as God. A well-organized socialism did not allow for any exceptions to its established laws in any way. Anyone who broke out of its mode was considered a collaborator against the state. Many Christians died for their faith in the Lord Jesus Christ at this time. The "Holy" Roman Church carried on the Roman Empire after the secular Roman Empire fell because of internal corruption.

E. The Antichrist Will Come Out of the Roman Empire

Daniel 7:8, 20, 24, 25 KJV; Daniel 8:9-12, 23-25

At the time of the Roman Empire, the Antichrist will arise. Three of the ten horns will fall to this **little horn**.

Read Matthew 7:13-27 to see what the outcome is to those who go to church at “The Church That Satan’s Slaves Built” versus those who go to church at “The Church That Jesus Built.”

F. God’s Eternal Kingdom Is the Church That Jesus Built!

Daniel 2:44, 45; Daniel 7:18, 21-22, 26-27; Daniel 8:13, 26, 27

The **little stone made without hands** that becomes a great mountain and fills the earth is “The Church That Jesus Built.” Let me remind you “every knee will bow and every tongue will confess that Jesus Christ is Lord to the glory of God the Father.” What will it be? Shall we bow our knees to Him and thank Him or will we face His judgment unprepared? This is covered in detail in “The Church That Jesus Built” found as Step 7.

III. What About the Church That Satan’s Slaves Built After Jesus Came Into the World to Save Sinners?

A. Jewish Religious Leaders

The first group, which ran counter to the “Church That Jesus Built,” was the Jewish religious leaders who called out for Jesus’ Roman style crucifixion. Note: This is no excuse to mistreat or condemn the Jewish people in any way. The truth is all people who do not accept Jesus as their personal Savior are crucifying Him.

B. The Next Group Was the Roman Empire.

In his book, “A History of the Christian Church” Lars P. Qualben gives “at least sixteen points of difference” between the Graeco-Roman State and the followers of Jesus, which inflamed them to wage war against the Christian faith. They are as follows:

1. “In the Graeco-Roman world the State was conceived of as the Highest Good. The State

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

included all the possible good that could come to man, even religion, which was subordinated to the State. Hence, supreme loyalty to the State was the great Roman ideal. Service to the State was the purpose of life. But the Christians were citizens of a kingdom that was not of this world. (139 – John 18:36) They recognized an authority that was higher than the State, and if the law of the Empire came in conflict with the law of God, they would obey God rather than man. (140 – Acts 5:29) It was this supreme loyalty to a law outside the Roman law that irritated and worried the Roman authorities more than all other accusations against Christianity combined. Christianity struck at the very root of ancient Romanism by opposing this one-sided, all-subjecting political element. The Christians were rightly accused of inducing the Romans to renounce the existing State religion, and to believe in the only true religion, Christianity. The Romans concluded that Christianity was anti-national and hostile to the State and disloyal to the Emperor. Hence the Christians had no right to exist. They were accused of high treason, and punished accordingly.

2. “Christianity appeared in the Graeco-Roman world as a new religion, not permitted. The guiding principle of Rome against new religions was, ‘Whoever introduced new religions, the tendency and character of which were unknown, whereby the minds of men might be disturbed, should, if belonging to the higher rank, be banished; if to the lower, punished with death.’ Another Roman law against secret meetings was turned against the Christians during the reign of Trajan. The Christian congregations were looked upon as secret associations, as unlawful corporations.

3. “The Christian refused to live like other people. The Roman world advocated pleasure, happiness, and the satisfaction of the senses as personal ends. The Christians preached and practiced self-denial, and emphasized the joy of a future life. They would not decorate their houses for a pagan festival; they would not make advantageous marriages into heathen families; they would not accept government offices which included the performance of heathen religious rites. To use the words of Caecilius, ‘You in the meantime, in suspense and anxiety, are abstaining from respectable enjoyments. You do not visit the shows; you are not present in the solemn processions; you do not appear at public banquets; you abhor the sacred contests, and the meats and drinks a portion of which has been offered and poured out upon the altars. You do not wreath your heads with flowers; you do not honor your bodies with odors; you reserve unguents for funeral rites, you even refuse garlands to your sepulchers—pale, trembling beings, worthy of pity, even the pity of our gods. Thus, wretched ones, you neither rise again, nor meanwhile do you live.’ The heathen populace, and the government, came to look upon the Christians as a race that was averse to all that is great, fair, and noble in humanity. The Christians were accused of being hostile to humanity—haters of mankind.

4. “The Roman religion was purely external; consequently it was very impressive. The Romans could not conceive of religious services without temples and images, altars and sacrifices. The early Christian had no impressive temples or images. They had no sacrifices and no altars. They prayed to an unseen God. The Romans could not understand such worship. They reasoned that the Christians had no God and that they therefore were atheists. But atheism was a very serious offence in the Roman Empire. Hence, away with the atheists!

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Charges of atheism and superstition were common during the reign of Domitian, A.D. 81-96.

5. "The Christians consistently refused to worship the Emperor because such worship would involve a denial of their Lord. The government considered such refusal as an act of high treason and punished the offenders accordingly. They were also looked upon as anarchists.

6. "Society, built on a basis of slavery, was filled with social classes. Christianity proclaimed the equality of all men before God, and thereby struck at the very root of slavery. The Apostolic Church was not in position, however, to take active measures against this evil. Consequently, this view did not invite active persecution.

7. "Family life was very corrupt. Infidelity and divorce were common. Infanticide was a prevailing practice. Christianity proclaimed the sacredness of marriage and the family life, and condemned exposure of infants as murder.

8. "There was a union of the State and religion, with religion subordinate to the State. Christianity favored a separation of Church and State.

9. "The Romans worshipped many gods and tolerated the officially recognized religions. The Christians excluded all other religions, and worshipped one God only.

10. "Christianity honored all useful labor, and exhorted all in every class to work. 'If any will not work, neither let him eat.' (141 – 2 Thess. 3:10) This was completely against contemporary thought.

11. "The miracles of healing, and the cures of demoniacs attributed to the Christians brought upon them the suspicion of practicing magic; of being in possession of magical books, the Scriptures; and of being in league with the powers of darkness. The practice of magic was a serious offence.

12. "Paul and Silas (142 – Acts 16:21) were accused of introducing customs which the Romans could not lawfully receive or observe. Christians were later frequently accused of destroying the good old customs, on which the Empire and civilization rested. Public calamities, such as droughts, earthquakes, famine, pestilence, floods, were looked upon as revenge of the gods because the people tolerated the Christians in their midst.

13. "Those who lived by pagan worship, men like the Ephesian silversmiths, (143 - Acts 19:23) the people who sold cattle for pagan sacrifices, the procurers, the poisoners, the fortune-tellers, etc., accused the Christian of injuring their trade.

14. "Some persecution arose from family dissensions, as foretold by the Lord. (144- Matth. 10:34 ff)

15. "The secrecy of the Christian meetings in times of persecutions gave rise to widely circulated—and generally believed—rumors that the Christians were guilty of abominable immorality (incest and cannibalism).

16. "As none but Christians would be present, they surrounded the Lord's Supper with some secrecy. Since the non-believers heard that the Christians on such occasions were eating "body" and drinking "blood," they spread stories that the Christians ate human flesh, drank human blood, and killed little children. As they credulously listen to such tales the populace stirred to blind rage, becoming a savage mob against the Christians." (pages 57-60)

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

The Roman Empire became a force against the real Christians. There was some relief from time to time, but for the most part, many people died for their faith in Jesus Christ under the Roman persecutions. The “Church That Satan’s Slaves Built” would allow no one to stand against it.

IV. If You Cannot Kill Them, You Infiltrate Them!

Next comes a period of the “The Church That Satan’s Slaves Built” infiltrating and corrupting “The Church That Jesus Built.” When the devil realized he was getting nowhere by trying to kill the church, he changed his line of attack. He sowed tares among the wheat. This caused Jesus’ Church to regroup and to become a greater light for this sin sick world.

Infiltration I – Jews

The temptation: But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which believed, saying, That it was needful to circumcise them (Antioch Christians) and to command them to keep the law of Moses (Acts 15:5 KJV).

The answer: “And after they had held their peace, James answered, saying, “Men and brothers, hearken unto me: Simeon has declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name. And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written, After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down, and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up: that the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, upon whom My name is called,” says the Lord, Who does all these things. Known unto God are all His works from the beginning of the world. Whereby my sentence is that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turning to God: but that we write unto them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and fornication, and thing strangled, and blood. For Moses of old time had in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath day” (Acts 15:13-21 ET).

Infiltration II – Gnostic

The temptation: Only a select few have knowledge of the hidden secrets that will set them free. This is similar to the Masonic Lodge, Mormons, and other

heathen mystery religions. Lars P. Qualben in his book “A History of the Christian Church” says the following on pages 78-79:

“The influence of Gnosticism on Christianity. When gnosticism came in touch with Christianity, it rapidly adopted the outward garb of the latter (1) by using the Christian forms of thought, (2) by borrowing its nomenclature, (3) by acknowledging Christ dualistically as the Savior of the world, (4) by simulating the Christian sacraments, (5) by pretending to be an esoteric revelation of Christ and his apostles, (6) by producing a great number of apocryphal Gospels, Acts, Epistles, and Revelations (apocalypses). Although gnosticism was utterly the opposite of Christianity, it was so well camouflaged by this borrowed garb that it appeared to the unwary as a modification or refinement of Christianity. In fact it soon claimed to be the only true form of Christianity, set apart for the elect, unfit for the vulgar crowd.” “Gnosticism, highly aggressive, became so widely diffused throughout the Christian churches that for several centuries, especially from the second to the fourth, it threatened to stifle Christianity altogether. Many of the early Church Fathers, especially Irenaeus, made great efforts to suppress and to uproot it. The gnostic leaders were excluded from membership in the churches, while gnosticism was denounced as heresy by the Church as a whole.”

The answer: Qualben continues:

“Christianity was influenced by gnosticism in at least seven ways. (1) Amid the general confusion ushered in by the gnostics, the Church was obliged to set up certain standards to be acknowledged by any one who claimed to be Christian. These standards included the Apostles’ Creed, the formation of the New Testament Canon, and the Apostolic Office, or the historic Episcopate. (2) The defence of the Christian faith led to the formation of Christian dogmas, expressed in current philosophical terminology. (3) The gnostic stress on mysteries, spiritual hymns, and impressive rites induced more elaborate liturgical services in the churches. (4) The gnostic dualism, and contempt for matter, paved the way for Christian asceticism, which in turn led to monasticism. (5) The intermediary beings of the gnostics paved the way for the Saints in the Catholic Church. Notice the relative position of Sophia and the Virgin Mary in the two systems. (6) The superficial division of mankind into elect and non-elect groups paved the way for the doctrine of predestination. (7) Although condemned by the Church, the gnostic movement has continued to live to the present day. Compare the Christian Science doctrine and the radical wing of the so-called liberal Christians.”

As you can see, “The Church That Jesus Built” did not fully recover from the impact of the gnostics’ invasion. It is still plagued with much of these things today. It is being passed off as Christian doctrine by many of our “Christian” churches.

Infiltration III - The Corrupt Papacy

This is the rise of the Roman Catholic Church cult. No offense to the devout Christian who is in it, but this church has many things that make it a cult rather than a true church of Jesus.

The temptation: Salvation was said to be through a system of bishops. Everyone had to approach God through a priest. People were saved through the sacraments of the Church.

The answer: “Jesus said to him, ‘I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man comes to the Father but by Me’” (John 14:6 ET). “Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved” (Acts 4:12 KJV). “For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus; Who gave Himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time” (1 Timothy 2:5, 6 ET).

This ungodly invasion of the Christian Church gave it 1000 years of spiritual darkness. When Martin Luther nailed his 95 theses on the door of the Castle Church in Whittenberg, Germany, God started breaking through this darkness with His glorious light.

Infiltration IV - Freemasonry and Its Associates

Acasia

American Lodge of Research

Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry

Ancient Arabic Order of Nobles of the Mystic Shrine or Shriners

Ancient Egyptian Order of Princesses of Sharemkhu

Ancient Egyptian Order of Sciots

Ancient Toltec Rite

Daughters of Mokanna

Daughters of the Nile

George Washington Masonic National Memorial Association

Grand College of Rites of the U. S. A.

Grand Council of Allied Masonic Degrees of the U. S. A.

High Twelve International

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Holy Order of Knights Beneficent of the Holy City
Holy Royal Arch Knight Templar Priests
Knight's Templar
Ladies Oriental Shrine of North America
Legion of Honor
Low Twelve Clubs
Masonic Clubs
Masonic Relief Association of the U. S. A.
Masonic Service Association of the United States
Mutual Guild
Mystic Order of the Veiled Prophets of the Enchanted Realm
National Sojourners
Order of DeMolay for Boys
Order of Desoms
Order of Job's Daughters
Order of Knight Masons (of Ireland)
Order of the Amarith
Order of the Eastern Star
Order of the Rainbow for Girls
Philalethes Society
Red Cross of Constantine-United Imperial Council
Royal Order of Jesters
Royal Order of Scotland
Societas Rosicruciana in Civitatibus Foederatis
Tall Cedars of Lebanon of the United States of America York Rite

A partial list of its other associated groups follows!

The Illuminati
Lucis Trust
Martiniste Society
Mormon Churches
Order of the Golden Dawn
O. T. O. (Ordo Templi Orientis)
Philosophical Research Society
Skull and Bones Society

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Societas Rocicruciana in Anglia
Thelema - Theosophical Society
Wiccan

A few quotes from Alfred Pike's book "Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry" 1871 edition, will show you why we call freemasonry a part of "The Church That Satan's Slaves Built."

"As a general thing, the Mahometan in the Orient, is far more honest and trustworthy than the Christian." (Page 35)

"The true name of Satan, the Kabalists say, is that of Yahveh reversed: for Satan is not a black god, but the negation of God. The Devil is the personification of Atheism or Idolatry."

"For the Initiates, this is not a Person, but a Force, created for good, but which may serve for evil. It is the instrument of Liberty or Free Will. They represent this Force, which presides over the physical generation, under the mythologic and horned form of the God PAM; thence came the he-goat of the Sabbat, brother of the Ancient Serpent, and the Light-bearer or Phosphor, of which the poets have made the false Lucifer of the legend." (Page 102)

"The doctrines of the Bible are often not clothed in the language of strict truth, but in that which was fittest to convey to a rude and ignorant people the practical essentials of the doctrine. A perfectly pure faith, free from all extraneous admixtures, a system of noble theism and lofty morality, would find too little preparation for it in the common mind and heart, to admit of prompt reception by the masses of mankind; and Truth might not have reached us, if it had not borrowed the wings of Error." (Page 224)

"LUCIFER, the light-bearer! Strange and mysterious name to give to the Spirit of Darkness! Lucifer, the Son of the Morning! It is he who bears the Light, and with its splendors intolerable blinds feeble, sensual, or selfish souls? Doubt it not! for traditions are full of Divine Revelations and Inspiration: and Inspiration is not of one Age nor of one Creed. Plato and Philo, also, were inspired." (Page 321)

"Masonry is a search after Light. That search leads us directly back, as you see, to the Kabalah." (Page 741)

"[The Blue Degrees are but the outer court or portico of the Temple. Part of the symbols are displayed there to the Initiate, but he is intentionally misled by false interpretations. It is not intended that he shall understand them; but it is intended that he shall imagine he understands them. Their true explication is reserved for the Adepts, the Princes of Masonry. The whole body of the Royal and Sacerdotal are hidden so carefully, centuries since, in the High Degrees, as that it was even yet impossible to solve many of the enigmas which they contain. It is well enough for the mass of those called Masons, to imagine that all is contained in the Blue Degrees; and whoso attempts to undeceive them will labor in vain, and without any true reward violate his obligations as an Adept. Masonry is the veritable Sphinx, buried to the head in the sands heaped around it by the ages.]" (Page 819)

"FREEMASONRY is the subjugation of the human that is in man by the Divine; the

Conquest of the Appetites and Passions by the Moral Sense and the Reason; a continual effort, struggle, and warfare of the spiritual against the Material and Sensual. That victory, when it has been achieved and secured, and the conqueror may rest upon his shield and wear the well-earned laurels, is the true HOLY EMPIRE.” (Pages 854, 855)

Many other such quotes could be listed, but I think this is enough to show you that anyone who is involved in this religion is not to be given a place of leadership in the Church of Jesus Christ.

Freemasonry information is found at: www.freemasonrywatch.org

The temptation: Making all religions equal. Putting other gods before the True and Living God. Taking the name of God in vain. Denying the blood of Jesus Christ as the only means of salvation.

This organization is full of wickedness to the fullest extremes. It has done much to turn men from the True and Living God to another gospel—a gospel of works. I was surprised to find that it has been the inspiration for such diverse groups as the Illuminati, the Mormon Church, the Jehovah Witnesses, the Shriners—to name a few of the many listed above.

The answer: The following scriptures will show you that the true way to God and a morally good life is through the Lord Jesus Christ. No one can save himself by his own self-righteousness regardless of how hard he works at it. See Exodus 20:1-7.

“No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. You cannot serve God and mammon” (Matthew 6:24).

See 1 Timothy 6:20, 21a; Ephesians 2:8-10; 1 Corinthians 1:17-31; 3:19; Colossians 2:1-3; James 3:13-18; 2 Timothy 3:16, 17; Titus 2:11-14; 3:1-7; Romans 8:1-28; Romans 6:1-23.

“He that covers his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesses and forsakes them shall have mercy” (Proverbs 28:13 ET). See also Revelation 22:13-21.

Infiltration V - Denominational Heresies

It is hard to find a denomination that has not been corrupted one way or another with false doctrines. The best way to find a counterfeit is to know what the real one looks like. The real one is portrayed in “The Church That Jesus Built” as

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Step 7 in this book.

The temptation: The church is divided by opposing groups. This gives the world a mixed message. This takes the Church's authority away from it. It is fertile ground to grow all kinds of "tares." It brings confusion to those that we are attempting to turn "from darkness to light and from the power of Satan to God."

The answer: Go back to the "Acts of the Apostles" in the Bible, to find ways to fulfill the Great Commission and the Great Commandment. Turn away from man-made methods for building Jesus' Church. Be willing to change your non-biblical beliefs. See Acts 1:7; Acts 2:1-11, 36-47.

Infiltration VI – Liberalism or Socialism

Think about how the Councils of Churches have infiltrated the churches with a "social gospel" that is turning them away from their real mission. To them, liberal does not mean generous. It means liberating oneself from the teachings that are "offensive" to them. Liberal theology in the church means socialism to the rest of the world. Following are lists of the member churches of the National and World Council of Churches. The churches in italics are members of both.

National Council of Churches Members

African Methodist Episcopal Church

The African Methodist Episcopal Zion Church

Alliance of Baptists

American Baptist Churches in the U. S. A.

The Antiochian Orthodox Christian Archdiocese of North America

Diocese of the Armenian Church of America

Christian Church (Disciples of Christ)

Christian Methodist Episcopal Church

Church of the Brethren

The Coptic Orthodox Church in North America

The Episcopal Church

Evangelical Lutheran Church in America

Friends United Meeting

Greek Orthodox Archdiocese of America

Hungarian Reformed Church in America

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

International Council of Community Churches

Korean Presbyterian Church in America

Malankara Orthodox Syrian Church

Mar Thoma Church

Moravian Church in America Northern Province and Southern Province

National Baptist Convention of America

National Baptist Convention, U S A Inc.

National Missionary Baptist Convention of America Orthodox Church in America

Orthodox Church in America

Patriarchal Parishes of the Russian Orthodox Church in the USA

Philadelphia Yearly Meeting of the Religious Society of Friends

Polish National Catholic Church of America

Presbyterian Church (U S A)

Progressive National Baptist Convention, Inc.

Reformed Church in America

Serbian Orthodox Church in the USA and Canada

The Swedenborgian Church

Syrian Orthodox Church of Antioch

Ukrainian Orthodox Church of America

United Church of Christ

The United Methodist Church

National Council Bodies

The Standing Conference of Canonical Orthodox Bishops in the Americas (SCOBA)

Canadian Council of Churches

National Council of the Churches of Christ in the USA

North American World Council of Churches Members

African Methodist Episcopal Church [USA]

African Methodist Episcopal Zion Church [USA]

American Baptist Churches in the USA

Anglican Church of Canada

Apostolic Catholic Assyrian Church of the East, N. A. Diocese

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Canadian Yearly Meeting of the Religious Society of Friends
Christian Church (Disciples of Christ) in Canada
Episcopal Church [USA]
Church of the Brethren [USA]
Episcopal Church
Estonian Evangelical Lutheran Church Abroad [Canada]
Evangelical Lutheran Church in America
Evangelical Lutheran Church in Canada
1Hungarian Reformed Church in America
International Council of Community Churches [USA]
International Evangelical Church [USA]
Moravian Church in America
National Baptist Convention of America
National Baptist Convention, USA, Inc
Orthodox Church in America
Polish National Catholic Church
Presbyterian Church in Canada
Presbyterian Church (USA)
Progressive National Baptist Convention, Inc. [USA]
Reformed Church in America [USA]
Religious Society of Friends [USA] - Friends General Conference -
Friends United Meeting
United Church of Canada
United Church of Christ [USA]
United Methodist Church [USA]

The temptation: To go along with the crowd. To try to stay with them and fight the changes, hoping they will get back to the Bible. To allow the church to be hijacked by ungodly people under the flag of being “open- minded.”

The answer: This is serious! The communists (liberals) are good at using Christian language to their own advantage. Recall: The gnostics did the same. You cannot change them. This is like a mixed marriage. You may think you can change your partner, but it is more likely you will be the one that is changed. If your church is on the above lists, you should either quit calling yourself a Christian or find a church that gets its message from the Holy Bible rather than the newspaper or ungodly organizations. See 2 Corinthians 6:14-18.

Infiltration VII - Paganism or Satanism

“The Church that Satan’s Slaves Built” was conceived and hatched in Hell. It has been nourished and advanced by men and women of corrupt minds throughout the ages. For some time, the Satanist Churches have been “ordaining” people to be pastors to infiltrate the Christian churches with its wickedness. Pokemon and other new age children’s cartoons, Harry Potter and The DaVinci Code are just a few other examples of how paganism is being brought into our Christian Churches.

The temptation: To let other people tell us what is right and wrong. To follow our emotions rather than the Word of God and the counsel of godly people. To conform to the world’s standards rather than God’s.

The answer: “Blessed is the man that walks not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor stands in the way of sinners, nor sits in the seat of the scornful. But his delight is in the law of the Lord; and in His law does he meditate day and night. And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that brings forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he does shall prosper. The ungodly are not so: but are like the chaff which the wind drives away. Therefore the ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous. For the Lord knows the way of the righteous: but the way of the ungodly shall perish” (Psalm 1 ET).

“Study to show yourself approved unto God, a workman that needs not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of Truth. But shun profane and vain babblings: for they will increase unto more ungodliness. And their word will eat as does a cancer: of whom is Hymenaeus and Philetus; Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some. Nevertheless the foundation of God stands sure, having this seal, ‘The Lord knows them that are His. And, Let every one that names the name of Christ depart from iniquity’ ” (2 Timothy 2:15-19 ET).

V. Five Churches in Revelation That Satan's Slave Built

1. The Loveless Ephesus Church

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Revelation 2:1-7

The trouble with the Ephesus Church was that it put duty above a personal loving relationship with God. This church did have this relationship, but left it in its zeal to maintain doctrinal correctness. We need to keep our doctrine Biblical with a zeal for a loving relationship with God number one in all our actions and attitudes. Jesus said that if we loved Him we would keep His commandments. See The Epistle to the Ephesians to see how to overcome this temptation and receive the blessing Jesus promises to this church.

2. The Undisciplined Pergamos Church

Revelation 2:12-17

The Pergamos Church allowed Satan to set up shop in its fellowship. They had a lack of church discipline. They had allowed anyone to be a part of the church program that wanted to be. Satan's Slaves Church lets everyone join it.

Without a church discipline that will define who can be a member of the church we will open ourselves up to all kinds of heresies coming into our fellowship. We are to be a fellowship of those who have given themselves to God and His program for our life. God's church is a called out fellowship of believers.

3. The Spineless Thyatira Church

Revelation 2:18-29 ET

The Thyatira Church was doing much good. Notice Jesus commends these churches for what He likes about them before He calls them to repent of a wrongdoing. Notice, also, He is calling out the church to be separated from the world, the flesh and the devil. This church allowed a woman to practice immoral acts within its fellowship. This is another characteristic of Satan's Slaves Church. Everything goes. Today we have "Christian" homosexuals, masons, Mormons, organized crime bosses, abortionists, heretics. You name it. Satan's Slaves Church have nothing to lose, so they are willing to give away everything.

4. The Backslidden Sardis Church

Revelation 3:1-6

The Sardis Church is a backslidden church. It had forsaken its original commitment to God and lost its zeal for the things of God. Some of the members loved God and others, but for the most part, it was dead. Man's church (that Satan's slaves built) is a dead church. God demands more than our leftovers. He demands our all.

5. The Lukewarm Laodicean Church

Revelation 3:14-22

Jesus had nothing good to say about the Laodicean Church. Jesus is standing on the outside knocking for entrance. It made Him want to vomit. This is the picture of many of our present day churches. They could do very well without God's help. They are doing it on their own. All is outward show with emptiness within. They have a form of godliness without its power with just enough religion to look good, but there are dead men's bones inside. With plenty of outward show, but no heavenly glow, they have become so earthly minded they are of no heavenly good. Such is the end of Satan's Slaves Church.

VI. What Has the Church That Satan's Slaves Built Ever Done For Humanity?

The answer to this question is very clear. They have only brought untold pain to multitudes lost in sin's dark night. Jesus sums it all up in Matthew 23. If you are serious about serving God, you should not do these things. This is only a thumbnail sketch of what is going on in our churches that is robbing it of the power God wants to give it, that would be of great service in our world today.

VII. Called Unto Holiness or Called Unto Speaking in Tongues?

INTRODUCTION

In this word of wisdom, we examine the shaky foundation of the "gift" of tongues in relationship to the solid foundation of the life of holiness. This is going to run counter to some people's beliefs. It is very important that you get this right.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

In doing so, you will need to submit your emotions to an honest examination of the inspired Word of God, in order to obtain a proper understanding of the instructions found in the Word of God, and to build a sound doctrine that brings honor and glory to your Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. Do not let your emotions dictate to you an action that conflicts with the plain revelation that you find in God's Holy Word. To approach this subject with a sound mind, you will need to forget about how you feel about speaking in tongues, and determine that to obey what God's Holy Word instructs you to do is far better than sacrificing your spiritual life for a mess of pottage at the altar of your emotional experiences. If the truth that is given in this word of wisdom is not fully followed, you and those you are leading or following are in real danger of falling headlong into spiritual disaster. Be not deceived, God is not mocked. See Galatians 6:7, 8; Romans 2:1-16. Do not take this lightly! This is very serious!

The real power that the Holy Spirit gives us is from perfect love that produces a pure heart, a good conscience, and a strong abiding faith. See I Timothy 1:5. This requires that we humble ourselves under the mighty hand of God so He can lift us up. This makes us free from every speck of the world, the flesh or the devil. In this state of grace, we are able to speak the truth in love graciously.

If you should realize that you have been deceived by the tongues spirit after reading this word of wisdom, do not feel threatened. It is easy to be deceived even when we are doing all we can to love God and others. Demons are very crafty. Very few people are able to say they have not been fooled by the devil at some time or other in their life. After walking with the Lord for over 50 years, I have found that you are never exempt from the deception of Satan. I have learned you must watch and pray that you enter not into temptation. I thank God for His deliverance. You can find a lot of helpful material at <http://www.christianissues.biz> to enable you to free yourself from demon deception and to live a life of holiness in this wicked world.

To recognize a counterfeit, you must know the authentic article. Part I is getting you acquainted with the authentic article of the faith of your Lord Jesus Christ as your faith is empowered by the Holy Spirit and manifested through a life of holiness. Part II is showing the deception of the tongues spirit as the search light of the inspired Word of God reveals its true character.

The literal translation from the Hebrew and the Greek is given for all the Scriptural quotes in this word of wisdom. They are taken from "The Interlinear Bible" and "The Englishman's Greek New Testament."

PART I

THE LIFE OF HOLINESS

THE GATE INTO HOLINESS

Psalm 24:7-10 Lift up your heads, O gates; and be lifted up, O everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. Who is this King of glory? Jehovah strong and mighty! Jehovah mighty in battle! Lift up your heads, O gates; even lift up, O everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. Who is this King of glory? Jehovah of hosts, He is the King of glory. Selah.

The gates are the things that keep us in sin and out of God's kingdom. The "everlasting doors" are God's plans for us. When the gates "lift up their heads," we are then able to "look unto Jesus, the Author and Finisher of our faith." When the "everlasting doors" are lifted up the way of our salvation is open to us through our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. When our gates lift up their heads through repentance of our sins and faith in Jesus' finished redemption through His death, burial, resurrection and ascension, we let the King of Glory come into our life. When the "everlasting doors" of God's plans for our lives are lifted up, we are showered with His glorious presence. Keep in mind: Jesus is the Jehovah of the Old Testament.

Psalm 118:19, 20 Open the gates of righteousness to me, I will enter into them; I will thank the Lord. This gate of the LORD; the righteous shall enter into it.

When we become children of God through the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the "gates of righteousness" are opened to us. We thank the Lord for His love and grace that has brought us to this place.

Isaiah 26:2 Open the gates, and the righteous nation shall come in, keeping faithfulness.

The Bible teaches us that we are a holy nation. When the gates of righteousness are opened to us, we enter into a fellowship of Believers and we are faithful to our

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Lord Jesus Christ.

Isaiah 62:10 Go through! Go through the gates; prepare you the way of the people! Cast up! Cast up the highway; gather out the stones; lift up a banner for the people.

When we enter into the gates of righteousness the Lord God of glory has prepared for His people, we step on to the highway of holiness. The stumbling stones are removed and God's banner over His people is love.

Matthew 7:13, 14 Go in through the narrow gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leads to death. And many are the ones who go through it. For narrow is the gate, and constricted is the way that leads into life, and few are the ones who find it.

A person can go through one of two gates in this life. You cannot go through both of them. One leads to eternal life. The other one leads to eternal destruction. The broad gate leads to eternal death. The narrow gate leads to eternal life. The broad gate appears to be self-fulfilling. The narrow gate appears to be restrictive. The self-fulfilling gate brings dissatisfaction. The restrictive gate brings love, joy, peace and great blessing.

Luke 13:24 Labor to enter in through the narrow gate: for I say to you; that many will seek to enter in, and will not have strength.

According to this Scripture, we need to expend our energy in seeking first the Kingdom of God and His righteousness.

John 10:7-10 Then Jesus again said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you that I am the door of the sheep. All who came before Me are thieves and robbers; but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door. If anyone enter through Me, he will be saved, and will go in, and will go out, and will find pasture. The thief does not come except that he may steal, and kill, and destroy. I came that they may have life, and may have it abundantly."

We are the sheep of God's pasture. Jesus is the door for the sheep. To go in any other way except through the Lord Jesus Christ is to be a thief. The thief robs us of our inheritance, our life and our loving relationship with our Wonderful Lord.

Hebrews 13:12 Therefore, that He might sanctify the people by His own blood,

Jesus also suffered outside the gate. So now let us go forth to Him outside the camp, bearing His reproach.

Jesus' sacrifice was outside the gate that we might be sanctified. To enter into a life of holiness we must meet Jesus outside the gate that keeps us locked into our selfish pleasures. To go outside the gate means we lay aside our self-centered life and take up a Christ-centered life.

Revelation 22:14, 15 Blessed are the ones doing His commands, that their authority will be over the tree of life, and by the gates they may enter into the city. But outside are the dogs, and the sorcerers, and the fornicators, and the murderers, and the idolaters and everyone loving and making a lie.

The gates into the eternal city are made of pearl. Jesus—the pearl of great price—for Whom we gave up our self-interest to have God's love and grace rule our life is the only gate into the eternal city. Notice those who do not have a right to enter into the eternal city.

WHEN WE ARE BORN INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD AT THE TIME WE REPENT OF OUR SINS AND ACCEPT JESUS, WE ARE FACED WITH THE HIGHWAY OF HOLINESS. WE CAN TURN AWAY FROM IT OR ENTER IN BY A FULL AND COMPLETE YIELDING OF OURSELVES TO GOD. WHEN WE DO THIS, GOD WILL GIVE US THE FIERY BAPTISM OF THE HOLY SPIRIT TO ENABLE US TO LIVE A HOLY LIFE WITH OUR OWN PERSONAL PENTECOST.

THE HIGHWAY OF HOLINESS

Isaiah 35 The wilderness and dry land shall rejoice for them: and the desert shall exult and blossom like the crocus. Blooming, it shall bloom and exult, even with joy and singing. Lebanon's glory shall be given to it, the honor of Carmel and Sharon; they shall see the glory of the LORD, the majesty of our God. Make the weak hands strong, and firm up the feeble knees. Say to those of a hasty heart, Be strong! Do not fear. Behold, your God will come with vengeance; with the full dealing of God. He will come and save you. Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf opened. Then the lame shall leap like a deer, and the tongue of the dumb shall sing. For water shall break out in the wilderness, and streams in the desert. And the mirage shall become a pool, and the thirsty land

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

shall become springs of waters, in the home of jackals, in its lair, and a place for the reed and rush.

And a **highway shall be there**, and a way, and it shall be called, **The Way of Holiness**. The unclean shall not pass over it. And it is for them, the wayfaring one; yea, fools shall not go astray. No lion shall be there; and no violent beast shall go up on it; it shall not be found there. But the redeemed ones shall walk there. And the ransomed of the LORD shall return and enter Zion, with singing and everlasting joy on their head; gladness and joy shall reach them; and sorrow and sighing shall flee.

The life of holiness is a daily walk on God's highway. It has been said, "Some take the high way and some take the low way." You must decide one way or the other. You cannot be neutral! The sad state of affairs today is that many more are taking the low way than those who are taking the high way. The only safe way to travel this highway is to look unto Jesus, the Author and Finisher of our faith.

In Isaiah 35, we have a graphic portrait of God's highway. The desolation in your life rejoices as you "blossom like a crocus" and brings forth "fruit unto righteousness and true holiness." You will be exulted to the point of joy and singing. You will see the glory and majesty of your LORD God. Your weak hands will be strong. Your feeble knees will be firm. There will be no fear in your life because "perfect love casts out fear." Your God will protect you as He saves you from the wiles of the devil. Your blind eyes and deaf ears will be opened as your LORD God gives you a spiritual discernment. The "lame shall leap like a deer" like the man that was healed at the beautiful gate to the temple in the Book of Acts. The "tongue of the dumb" shall sing the praises of God. "Waters shall break out in your wilderness and streams in the desert" as rivers of living water flow out from you. You will have enough of the water of life for yourself with a superabundance to give to others. Though you walk through the valley of the shadow of death, you will be safe in the arms of Jesus.

There will not be any unclean thing, a lion, or violent beast on it. The ransomed of the LORD will be there with singing and everlasting joy. Joy and gladness shall come to you. Sorrow and sighing shall flee from you.

AS YOU GO SINGING ALONG LOOKING TO JESUS FOR EVERYTHING,
YOU WILL SEE SIGNPOSTS BESIDE OR ABOVE THE HIGHWAY. ONE
THING YOU WILL NEED TO DO IS UNDERSTAND THE MESSAGES ON
THE SIGNPOSTS SO THAT YOU CAN TAKE THE CORRECT ACTION AS

YOU “WALK IN THE SPIRIT.” THIS REQUIRES A DEVOTION TO GOD, TO HIS WORD AND HIS WORK.

There are no detours on the Highway of Holiness. The signs come as warnings or promises. You will find many of these as you study the Word of the LORD in a spirit of prayer with a willingness to obey the commands and claim the promises of the true and living God.

You will be tempted to leave the highway in two ways. You will either be tempted to take an easier way or to take a more glamorous way. The easy way goes to the left into the pig pin as you settle for less than the best. The more glamorous way takes you to the right where it feels so good. As you walk in the light on the King's Highway of Holiness, you will need to be careful to keep your eyes on Jesus. Watch and pray that you not fall into temptation. Trust and obey, for there is no other way.

THE HOLY TEMPLE

The holy temple had three parts. There was the outer court, the holy place and the most holy place. The temple is a place where gifts and sacrifices are presented to God. In the outer court, there was a brazen altar where animals were sacrificed. The inner court consisted of the holy and most holy places. Once a year the high priest offered up a blood sacrifice on the golden altar in the most holy place. The priest kept the light burning and the show bread fresh in the holy place every day. The outer court represents our body. The holy place represents our soul. The most holy place represents our spirit. We are to present our bodies a living sacrifice to God. See Romans 12:1, 2. Our body is our contact point with people, the material world and every day events. Our soul is our contact point with the animal kingdom on a small scale. Our spirit is our contact point with the spirit world.

I Corinthians 3:16, 17 Do you not know that you are the temple of God, and the Spirit of God dwells in you? If anyone corrupts the temple of God, God will bring that one to corruption; for the temple of God is holy, which you are.

When we enter into a life of holiness and daily walk in the Spirit, we become the temple of the Holy Spirit. Any place the Holy Spirit dwells becomes sacred and holy. If we corrupt the body, God's temple, we will bring God's wrath upon us.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

I Corinthians 6:19, 20 Or do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit in you, which you have of God; and you are not of yourself. For you are bought with a price; then glorify God, in your body, and in your spirit, which are of God.

God has given us the Holy Spirit to dwell in us. We need to realize we have been bought with a price, and that Jesus paid it for us on the cross. Because of the two above facts, we are to glorify God in our body and in our spirit.

2 Corinthians 6:16 And what agreement does a temple of God have with idols? For you are a temple of the living God, even as God said, "I will dwell in them, and walk among them; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people."

No idols can remain in the temple of God. If we love God, we will keep His commandments.

Ephesians 2:19-21 So, then, you are no longer strangers and tenants, but you are fellow-citizens of the saints and of the household of God, being built up on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the cornerstone; in Whom all the building fitted together grows into a holy temple in the Lord; in whom you also are being built together into a dwelling-place of God in the Spirit.

When we become the temple of the Holy Spirit, we enter into a new life in Christ. The Church becomes the household of God. The Church becomes a holy temple in the Lord and a dwelling-place of God in the Spirit. As we walk on the King's Highway of Holiness, we are developing a loving relationship with God and those around us. This brings us into a fellowship that is to be constantly nourished and developed.

THE THRONE ROOM

1 Samuel 2:8-11 He raised the poor from the dust; He lifts up the needy from the dunghill, to cause them to sit with nobles; yea, He caused them to inherit a throne of honor; for to the LORD are the pillars of the earth; and He sets the habitable world on them. He keeps the feet of His saints, and the wicked are silenced in darkness; for man does not become mighty by power. They who strive with the LORD will be smashed; He thunders in the heavens against him; the LORD judges the ends of the earth, and gives strength to His king, and exalts the

horn of His anointed.

Those who have decided to walk with God on the Highway of Holiness are the King's children. Many verses in the New Testament tell us about the Kingdom of God. John the Baptist and Jesus began their ministry by saying, "Repent, for the kingdom of God is at hand ." See Psalm 100 concerning how we are to enter into the throne room.

THE WORSHIP CENTER

Psalm 29:2 Give to the LORD the glory of His name; worship the LORD in the majesty of holiness.

We can only worship the LORD when we have a right relationship with Him. This can only happen as we are filled with the Holy Spirit.

Psalm 96:9 O worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness; tremble before Him, all the earth.

Only as we have a proper respect for the LORD can we worship Him in the beauty of holiness. Holiness causes us to be beautiful people in our spirits. It removes all sin from us and makes us loving, gracious children of God. Our worship of God is complete in every respect.

John 4:23, 24 But an hour is coming and now is, when the true worshippers will worship the Father in spirit and truth; for also the Father seeks such to worship him. God is a Spirit, and they that worship Him, must worship in spirit and truth

We are to worship the Lord in spirit and in truth.

PART II

SPEAKING IN TONGUES

THE SCRIPTURAL FOUNDATION FOR PART II

Jesus' words from Matthew 12:33-37 read, "Either make the tree good, and its fruit good, or make the tree corrupt, and its fruit corrupt: for from the fruit the tree

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

is known. Offspring of vipers, how are you able, being wicked, to speak good things? For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks. A good man out of the good treasure of the heart puts forth good things: and an evil man out of the wicked treasure puts forth wicked things. But I say unto you, that every idle word whatsoever men may speak, they shall render of it an account in the day of judgment. For by your words you shall be justified, and by your words you shall be condemned.”

1. As a tree is known by its fruit, so a person is known by the fruit that is exhibited through what he says to or about others.
2. No corrupt person can speak good things with good motives.
3. No good person can speak corrupt things with corrupt motives.
4. We will be judged for every idle word that we speak. The Greek word used for idle is argon (αργον). As you know, in chemistry, argon is an inert gas. The basic form for argon is argos (αργος). The definitions for argos are inactive, unemployed, and adverse from labour, unprofitable, hollow, and injurious.
5. The words we speak will either bring blessings (justified) or curses (condemned) upon us or others.
6. It stands to reason, the words we speak show the fruit of our inner life. To try to hide what we are saying to others or in a group is both irresponsible and dangerous.
7. It is very important that our lives be an open book before God and man. Anything less than this is fertile ground for suspicion, deception, selfishness, fear, doubt and a host of other wicked fruits that have no place among the saints of the true and living God.

Jesus’ words as stated in Matthew 10:25-28 say, “Sufficient for the disciple that he become as his teacher, and the bondman as his Lord. If they called the master of the house Beelzebul, how much more those of his household? You should not therefore fear them; for nothing is covered which shall not be uncovered, and hidden which shall not be known. What I tell you in the darkness speak in the light; and what you hear in the ear proclaim upon the housetops. And you shall not fear because of those who kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather you should fear Him who is able to destroy both soul and body in Gehenna (hell).

1. The saints of God are like their Master, the Lord Jesus Christ.
2. The devil and his crowd are looking for things to accuse God’s saints of

doing or saying.

3. We are not to fear what men or demons can or will do to us.
4. We are to fear our Master and Him only are we to serve.
5. Jesus commands us to tell to others what he has shown to us in secret.
6. What we hear in the ear we are to proclaim upon the housetops.
7. Heaven will be worth all the suffering we go through here for Jesus' sake.

Jesus elaborates on this further in Luke 12:1b-5 as follows: 'first He began to say to His disciples, "Take heed to yourselves of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy; for nothing is covered up which shall not be uncovered, nor hidden which shall not be known; wherefore whatever you said in the darkness, shall be heard in the light; and what you spoke in the ear in chambers, shall be proclaimed upon the housetops. But I say to you, my friends, you should not fear because of those who kill the body, and after these things are not able to do anything more. But I will show you Whom you should fear: fear Him who after having killed, has authority to cast into the gehenna (hell); yea I say to you, fear Him."

1. We are not to be like the hypocritical Pharisees; covering our sins in a cloak of secrecy.
2. Every word we speak is going to be put forward for the world to see and judge.
3. Do not be fearful of what others do to you. If they kill you, you will go to be with your Lord.
4. Fear the true and living God only.

Then there is the idea of being a good steward of the gift(s) our Lord has given to us. To illustrate this principle, Jesus gave the following parable in Matthew 25:14-30: "For as a man leaving the country called his own bondmen, and delivered to them his property. And to one he gave five talents, and to another two, and to another one, to each according to his respective ability; and immediately left the country. And he having gone who received the five talents trafficked with them, and made five other talents. In like manner also he who received the two talents he also gained other two. But he who received the one having gone away dug in the earth, and hid the money of his lord. And after a long time the lord of those bondmen comes, and takes account with them. And he having received the five talents, brought to him other five talents, saying, 'Lord, five talents you did deliver to me; behold, other five talents have I gained besides

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

them.’ And his lord said to him, ‘Well! Good and faithful bondman, you were faithful over a few things, over many things I will set you: enter into the joy of your lord.’ And having come to him he also who received the two talents said, ‘Lord, two talents you did deliver to me; behold, the two talents I have gained two talents besides them.’ And his lord said to him, ‘Well! Good and faithful bondman, you were faithful over a few things, over many things I will set you: enter into the joy of your lord.’ And having come to him he who also had received the one talent said, ‘Lord, I knew you that you are a hard man, reaping where you did not sow, and gathering whence you did not scatter, and being afraid, having gone away I hid your talent in the earth, behold, you have your own.’ And answering, his lord said to him, ‘Wicked and slothful bondman, you knew that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I scattered not; it behoved you therefore to put my money to the money changers, and coming I should have received mine own with interest. Take therefore from him the talent, and give it to him who has the ten talents. And to every one who has shall be given, and it shall be in abundance; but from him who has not, even that which he has shall be taken from him. And the useless bondman cast you out into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of the teeth.’”

1. What the Lord gives us is to be used to increase His kingdom.
2. What the Lord gives us is not our own to use any way we please.
3. God determines how His gifts are to be used.
4. God expects us to increase His gifts to His benefit.
5. When we use our God-given gifts for His benefit, we get to keep the increase when God passes out the rewards for our faithfulness.
6. If we hide our Lord’s gifts, He will judge us for it.
7. Only those who increase his Lord’s gifts are allowed to enter into the joys of the Lord.
8. The “gift” of tongues is the only gift that cannot be increased. Its only purpose is to communicate the Gospel of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ to other language groups.
9. If we cannot bring an increase for the Lord with it, it should occupy very little of our attention.
10. If you cannot take it to the “bank” to collect interest on it, leave it alone.

Guidelines for holiness are outlined in Romans 12. Observe that we are not isolated in our walk with the Lord. We are part of the body of Christ as stated in

Romans 12:3, 4 “For I say through the grace which is given to me, to everyone that is among you, not to be high-minded above what it behooves you to be minded; but to be minded so as to be sober-minded to each as God divided a measure of faith. For even as we have many members in one body, but the members all have not the same function; thus we the many are one body in Christ, and each one members of each other.

Jesus died for the church so that it would be a glorious, holy, blameless bride for Himself! Ephesians 5:25-27 states, “Husbands, love your own wives, even as also Christ loved the assembly, and gave up himself for it, that He might sanctify it, having cleansed it by the washing of water by the word, that He might present it to Himself the glorious assembly, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any of such things; but that it might be holy and blameless.”

In Matthew 6:33 Jesus tell us, “But seek you first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you.”

Romans 11:29 tells us the gifts and calls of God are not to be repented of. This would indicate that only those who are in a clear standing with God could receive the gifts and callings of God. God will not give His glory to those who are not living a holy life.

AS WE CONFIRM THE ABOVE SCRIPTURAL FOUNDATION FOR OUR CHRISTIAN LIFE, LET US STUDY I CORINTHIANS 12-14 TO OBTAIN GOD’S WILL IN THE USE OF THE “GIFT” OF TONGUES IN THE BODY OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOR JESUS CHRIST!

1. Paul lays down guidelines as to how the gift of tongues is to be used to edify the body of Christ in I Corinthians 12-14.

2. We should not lean on our feelings or experiences as a guide in drawing a conclusion concerning the gift of tongues.

3. The scripture is our final authority for all things pertaining to what is to be accepted as faith and practices for the Church.

Anything that takes our focus off the Lord Jesus Christ is not of God! A careful study of I Corinthians 12-14 will deliver us from the false teaching on the gift of tongues and bring our focus back to our personal relationship with our Lord!

I Corinthians 12:1, 2

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

We need to realize we were led astray by the idols that were around us before we were saved. In other words, when we were sinners we were deceived into thinking right was wrong and wrong was right. To remember this will make us cautious in accepting something just because it feels or looks good. We will test the spirits to see if they are of God or not!

I Corinthians 12:3

1. No one can speak in the Spirit of God and curse Jesus at the same time. How would you know whether you were cursing Jesus or not, if you could not understand what was coming out of your mouth? Consider this well!

2. No one can say Jesus is Lord except by the Holy Spirit. Jesus will be Lord of all or not Lord at all. Is Jesus your Lord?

I Corinthians 12:4-6

1. There are various gifts, but the same Spirit. The Holy Spirit gives Jesus' gifts to His church to do the work of the ministry.

2. There are various services, but the same Lord. The services or ministries are given to us through and by Jesus Christ.

3. There are various operations or workings, but the same God Who operates all things in all. This is God the Father.

4. Thus, God the Father prepares it, God the Son pays for it and God the Holy Spirit gives it to us in Jesus' name.

I Corinthians 12:7

For each is given the manifestation of the Holy Spirit for profit. Never is this profit to an individual for his sole benefit. The whole of God's kingdom is to profit through the Spirit's manifestation. There is no place for selfcenteredness in this arrangement.

I Corinthians 12:8-11

There are eight gifts of the Holy Spirit listed in the order of their importance: word of wisdom, word of knowledge, faith, gifts of healing, operations of works of power, prophecy, discerning of spirits, kinds of tongues and interpretations of tongues.

1. No one person has all these gifts.

2. These gifts are not sought for but are given as the Holy Spirit sees the need

for them.

3. Each church will have directly from the Holy Spirit the gifts it needs to carry out its kingdom-building mission.

I Corinthians 12:12-25

1. Each member in the Body of Christ is equally important.
2. Each member has at least one gift that is given by the Holy Spirit.
3. Each member is to work in harmony with the other gifted members of the Body of Christ.
4. There is to be no divisive spirit in the Body of Christ.

I Corinthians 12:26

Each member shares in the glories and defeats of the Body of Christ.

I Corinthians 12:27

All born-again, Spirit-anointed people are members of the Body of Christ.

I Corinthians 12:28

God has placed in the Body of Christ those who are to manage it under the direction of the Holy Spirit. In the order of importance, they are as follows: apostles, prophets, teachers, works of power, gifts of healings, helps, governments, and kinds of tongues or kinds of languages.

I Corinthians 12:29, 30

Not everyone leads the church. We are all workers together with God standing where God has placed us.

I Corinthians 12:31

This verse should be joined to I Corinthians 13. The better way, the more surpassing way is the fruit of the Holy Spirit. In referring to the Holy Spirit, we must understand that He is holy. In addition, everyone who is filled or baptized with the Holy Spirit is holy.

I Corinthian 13:1-3

Without the love of God shed abroad in our hearts (Romans 5:5), all we do is worthless and destructive. Tongues of men and angels, prophesying, knowing all

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

mysteries, having all knowledge, faith to remove mountains, feeding the hungry, and being burned alive for the cause of the gospel is of no avail without God's self-sacrificing, self-giving love, active in our every relationship—without conservation or reservation.

I Corinthians 13:4-7

Love has patience, is kind, is not envious, is not vain-glorious, is not puffed up, acts not unseemly, seeks not the things of its own, is not quickly provoked, reckons not evil, rejoices not at unrighteousness, rejoices with the truth, covers all things, believes all things, hopes all things, and endures all things.

I Corinthians 13:8

Love will outlast prophecy, tongues and knowledge.

I Corinthians 13:9-12

1. When perfect love comes into our life by the baptism of the Holy Spirit, knowledge and prophecy will stand in the background and fade away into insignificance.

2. Perfect love will help us to grow from baby Christians to fully mature children of the True and Living God.

3. Perfect love will clear our vision to see all the counsel of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

I Corinthians 13:13

Now we have faith, hope and love. When we get to heaven all we will need is Love.

I Corinthians 14:1

We may want spirituals (endowments of the Holy Spirit to do the work of ministry), but our pursuit should be the fruit of the Spirit (See Galatians 5:22, 23).

Prophecy (A special gift to set forth matters of divine teaching.) should be our number one concern above tongues, as you will see very clearly its usefulness unfolding in this chapter.

I Corinthians 14:2

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

When a person speaks in a tongue, he does not speak to man, but to God. No one understands what he is saying. To those who hear him, it is mysterious babbling. God sees the heart and knows what is being communicated, but it is useless for the edification of the church.

I Corinthians 14:3

When a person prophesies in the Body of Christ, he speaks to men for building up, encouragement, and consolation for all who are present.

I Corinthians 14:4

Tongues builds up the individual (it is self-centered) and prophecy builds up the church (it is Christ-centered).

I Corinthians 14:5

Paul says that it is all right to speak in tongues when it is properly regulated. Follow with me as I expound how tongues are to be regulated in the Church as outlined in this chapter. Notice Paul says he would rather that we prophesy, as this will bring the greatest good to the Church. The only way tongues can be of use is to be interpreted for the whole assembly to be lifted up.

I Corinthian 14:6

What is being said is to be a revelation, knowledge, prophecy or teaching. Church is no place to show off our gifts. If it has no useful purpose, then it should not be practiced in the Body of Christ or in our private life.

I Corinthians 14:7-11

If the sound that is coming out of you is not understood, you are just speaking in the air and causing confusion in the assembly.

The people that are hearing you speaking in tongues without a proper interpretation think you are a barbarian or a foreigner speaking a strange language.

I Corinthians 14:12

Our purpose for being in church should be for the edification of each one that is in the assembly.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

I Corinthians 14:13

If you are speaking in tongues in the church, you should pray that you would be able to interpret it to the Body of Jesus for their edification.

I Corinthians 14:14, 15

It is useless to pray in tongues if you or anyone else does not understand what you are saying. The solution is to pray in a way that you and everyone else understands what you are saying. This goes for singing as well as praying.

I Corinthians 14:16, 17

When you speak in tongues with others not understanding what is being said, you are being very selfish.

I Corinthians 14:18-20

Paul speaks in tongues more than all the Corinthians because he is the apostle of the Gentiles and has been given the gift of tongues to communicate the gospel to all the nations. He does not use it for a show. He is not babbling like a baby and is calling on the Corinthian Church to follow his example.

I Corinthians 14:21

Tongues-speaking without proper interpretation, will drive away the people we are trying to lead into a loving relationship with God.

I Corinthians 14:22

Tongues are a sign for unbelievers. Prophecy is for believers. What people are being referred to in this verse? A careful study of the gift of tongues in the book of Acts will give us the answer. Recall, Jews ask for a sign (I Corinthians 1:22). Furthermore, in the same verse the Greeks seek wisdom. Notice tongues are for a sign. There are three times the gift of tongues was given in the book of Acts—on the day of Pentecost when Jews were gathering from 15 different nations; Cornelius's household and his friends, where Jews were present with Peter; and Jewish disciples of John the Baptist at Ephesus. The 3000 that were saved on the day of Pentecost did not speak in tongues; Paul did not speak in tongues when Ananias prayed for him; and the 5000 that were referred to in Acts did not speak in tongues. In fact, tongues was only exercised when Jews needed a sign that God's salvation was for everyone.

I Corinthians 14:23-25

These verses confirm the interpretation of v 22 above. The result of speaking in tongues to unbelieving and unlearned Greeks or people who are not Jews is that they think we have gone mad. When we prophesy they are brought under conviction and get saved.

I Corinthians 14:26-32

What is the solution to a church that has “gone mad?” Paul gives the answer. Have a psalm, a teaching, a tongue, a revelation, and an interpretation for the tongue. Everything is to be done for the building up of the Body of Christ. You are to have no more than two or three tongues spoken with their interpretation in any one Church gathering. In addition, two or three prophecies are to be given, with the other prophets monitoring the message to make sure it is sound teaching from the Word of God in a church service.

I Corinthians 14:33

If there is disorder in the church this is not from God, seeing God brings peace to all the assemblies of the saints.

I Corinthians 14:34, 35

Women were not to speak in a church service of Paul’s day, because the only way they could do this was to call out to their husbands on the other side of the church. Women and girls were on one side of the church, with men and boys on the other side.

I Corinthians 14:36-40

Do not think you are the only one who has a message from God. Be subject to the leading of the Holy Spirit, and this will assure that each church service will have all things done becomingly, and with order for the edifying of the Body of Christ and the advancement of the Kingdom of God to the ends of the earth.

SUMMARY STATEMENT AND CONCLUDING OBSERVATIONS

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

In 2 Corinthians 13:1, Paul says: “This third time I am coming to you. In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every matter be established.”

In establishing a doctrine for the Church to follow, we should be able to find the doctrine: taught by Jesus; commanded to the Church; promised to the Church; examples given to the Church of it being done in the Bible; found in at least two places in the Bible and the context should agree with the text.

When it comes to the “gift” of tongues being an evidence of being baptized with the Holy Spirit, there is no Scriptural ground for it. Tongues can be, and often is, faked. Anyone can jabber off a few strange sounds and then say such is the evidence of being filled with the Holy Spirit. The problem with this is God does not use speaking in tongues as the evidence of being filled or baptized with the Holy Spirit. Jesus said that we would know them by their fruits. The fruit of the Holy Spirit is found in Galatians 5:22-26. This is what I Corinthians 13 is explaining to us. This is the reason that when Peter was explaining what happened to Cornelius he did not stress tongues. He did stress that their hearts were purified by faith. See Acts 15:8, 9. Tongues were a sign for the unbelieving Jews. Heart purity is the result of being filled with the Holy Spirit. What God is calling us to do is to develop our self-sacrificing love for God, others, and our fellow Christians. If there is no self-sacrificing love in the heart, there is no Holy Spirit there either, because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts when we are baptized or filled with the Holy Spirit. See Romans 5:1-5.

There are 129 times when the word tongue is found in the Bible. There are 95 in the Old Testament and 34 in the New Testament. Of these, five in the Old Testament refer to a known language and 90 are talking about our physical tongue. In the New Testament, 15 refer to a language and 19 to our physical tongue. Then, there are 36 times the word tongues is found in the Bible. The Old Testament has nine references with three being languages. In the New Testament, there are 27 references with 26 referring to languages. Of the 165 references listed above 116 talk about a physical tongue and 49 refer to a language.

In I Corinthians 14, tongues are not referred to as a “gift” of the Holy Spirit. In addition, v 21 is the only place in this chapter where tongues are referred to as another language. In other verses in this chapter, the word “unknown” is written in italics. This means it was not in the original Greek text. This chapter is Paul’s attempt to show how much greater prophecy is than tongues. Tongues, known foreign languages, were only of value in the Church if they could be translated

into a language everyone understood.

MY CONCLUSION IS that the modern day tongues spirit is **not** the Holy Spirit on the following observed comparisons:

1. The Holy Spirit brings unity to the Body of Christ.
The tongues spirit brings division to the Body of Christ.
2. The baptism with the Holy Spirit has solid Scriptural support.
The baptism with the tongues spirit has no Scriptural support.
3. The Holy Spirit lifts up Christ.
The tongues spirit does not lift up Christ.
4. The Holy Spirit makes people holy.
The tongues spirit does not make people holy.
5. The Holy Spirit is Christ-centered.
The tongues spirit is self-centered.
6. The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of Truth.
The tongues spirit is a spirit of deception.
7. The Holy Spirit brings people to the light.
The tongues spirit keeps people in the dark.
8. The Holy Spirit brings peace.
The tongues spirit brings confusion.
9. The Holy Spirit gives power to complete the mission of the Church.
The tongues spirit has no useful purpose for the mission of the Church.
10. The Holy Spirit appeals to our spiritual growth.
The tongues spirit appeals to our fleshly appetites.
11. The Holy Spirit is not of this world.
The tongues spirit is the spirit of this world.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

12. The Holy Spirit is the Comforter to the Body of Christ.
The tongues spirit brings no comfort to the Body of Christ.
13. The Holy Spirit removes sin by applying the blood of Jesus.
The tongues spirit co-exists with sin.
14. To have the Holy Spirit one must act on faith to Jesus' promises.
To have the tongues spirit one must seek "it" on men's promises.
15. The Holy Spirit comes through obedience and faith.
The tongues spirit comes by letting the mind go blank.
16. The Holy Spirit is from the True and Living God of all ages.
The tongues spirit is from the god of this age.
17. The Holy Spirit comes from above.
The tongues spirit comes from below.
18. The Holy Spirit renews the mind.
The tongues spirit suppresses the mind.
19. The Holy Spirit gives true security.
The tongues spirit gives a false sense of security.
20. The Holy Spirit witnesses of Jesus.
The tongues spirit witnesses of itself.
21. The Holy Spirit offers ease of life.
The tongues spirit offers you a life of ease.
22. The Holy Spirit prepares people to be the Bride of Christ.
The tongues spirit prepares people for the New World Order.
23. The Holy Spirit offers us the hope of all ages.

The tongues spirit offers us a false hope for this age.

24. The Holy Spirit sets people free.

The tongues spirit enslaves people.

25. The Holy Spirit lifts us up into heavenly places in Christ Jesus.

The tongues spirit keeps people tied to this world.

This conclusion has been reached after an intense study of this problem, much prayer and a direct revelation of its truthfulness in our Lord Jesus Christ. May you be blessed!

The temptation – Make the Bible conform to your emotions rather than your emotions conform to the Bible.

The answer – Always life up the Lord Jesus Christ. When you do this you will be living in the Spirit. Read John 16:6-14.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

STEP 2

The Law Mapped out in a graphics
Over 300 “keys” to understanding the kingdom of God
“Application of this truth,” to help you apply a learned truth
Questions for further study

**AN EXTENSIVE GUIDE TO UNDERSTANDING
THE JUDEO-CHRISTIAN SCRIPTURES**

SCRIPTURES

These Scriptures and several others will be looked at in Step 2 as I show the truth found in the Bible! This part of your journey will help you get grounded in God's Holy Word.

Are you ready to journey into God's wonderful land of promise?

“All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works” (2 Timothy 3:16-17).

“We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto you do well that you take heed, as unto a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit” (2 Peter 1:19-21).

“By the word of the LORD were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of His mouth” (Psalms 33:6).

“Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear” (Hebrews 11:3).

“For ever, O LORD, Your word is settled in heaven” (Psalm 119:89).

“Your word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path” (Psalm 119:105).

“Your word is very pure: therefore Your servant loves it” (Psalms 119:140).

“By the word of the LORD were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of His mouth (Psalm 33:6).

“Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word , so that

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

things which are seen were not made of things which do appear” (Hebrews 11:3).

“Your word is true from the beginning: and everyone of Your righteous judgments endures for ever” (Psalms 119:160).

“Sanctify them through Your truth: Your word is truth” (John 17:17).

“Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men” (1 Corinthians 1:25).

“For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold (restrain) the truth in unrighteousness; Because that which may be known of God is manifest (shown) in them; for God has shown it unto them. For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four footed beasts, and creeping things” (Romans 1:18-23).

INTRODUCTION

Before you look at the truth found in the Bible, you need to consider a few things. In the first place, you do not have to be a theologian to understand the Bible. All you need is a desire to understand and a willingness to accept what God's Holy Spirit reveals to you through His Word. Then, when you study the Bible, you are dealing with absolute truth. For this reason, you do not need knowledge of such things as the culture of the Bible days, geological or religious backgrounds or the languages of Greek and Hebrew to understand the Bible truths. These all help you understand the original intent of the Bible character; however, the Bible is its own best interpreter, and its principles are for all cultures and generations. By getting a good translation of the Scriptures, and letting God help you understand it, you can get all God has for you. (See 1 Corinthians 1:18-2:16.)

If you want to do a serious study of the Holy Bible, there are several Bible concordances, histories, dictionaries, handbooks, interlinear Bibles and word study books you can get to help you. Beware! All the new Bible translations need to be compared to the received text or the Authorized Version (KJV) for accuracy. The Interlinear Bible from Hendrickson, copyright by Trinitarian Bible Society, would be your best choice for the received text.

The account of creation, found in Genesis 1 and 2, is best understood when you look at it in the light of a universe that was unaffected by the curse of sin. In this account, the created universe functioned differently than it does now. There was no degenerative element in the original earth before the fall of the human race. You need to think of what the earth would be like if it were regenerative in nature rather than degenerative as it is now.

If you are a witness to a criminal act, you must tell what you have seen to the court. (You would not say a person is talking in circles when relating a crime he

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

witnessed, would you?) The Bible is God's witness to you of Himself and His dealings with the human race. Why would you want to say the Bible is talking in circles when it records what God's witnesses are telling you about God and His ways? Believe it, God is not "talking in circles" on any subject He addresses!

Now let us look at 300+ "keys" to understanding the Bible together.

Remember the Bible deals with relational, absolute truth. Bible science (theology) deals with God's revealed truth. Thus, you do not need to prove the Bible. What you do need to do is to understand and apply the Bible to your daily life. This part of this book will be devoted to letting the Bible speak for itself with the "keys" to understanding the area under review. There will also be some hints on how to apply these truths to your daily living. This will be followed with some questions you can use to review the material and gain a better insight into the concepts covered in each chapter.

Places Where You Can Find Bible Study Helps

1. Bible Bookstores
2. Used Bookstores
3. Publishers of Bible materials
4. The Internet has several places. Check out my website at: <http://www.thewindsofthespirit.org/> in the Christian Workers Packet link.
5. Your pastor would have them in his library.
6. Yard sales have books from time to time.
7. Auctions have Christian books as well.

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

“God is a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth” (John 4:24).

CHAPTER 1

THE WORLD OF THE SPIRIT

This step in your book has started with this chapter to remind you of the fact that there is a spiritual realm, which interacts with the physical one. You are more than a physical being battling to survive. You are created to have fellowship with your God. You are here to cooperate with God and your fellow human beings to make this world a better place in which to live, now and for generations to come.

You need to develop an awareness of the spiritual as well as the material. You need to draw near to God so He can draw near to you. You need to “humble yourself under the mighty hand of God” so he can “lift you up” on high. This can only be accomplished as you become a student of the Bible as well as the sciences.

Are you ready to enter the spiritual world of the True and Living God?

KEY 1 - God is the only self-existing being in the universe.

“Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever You had formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, You are God” (Psalm 90:2 ET).

KEY 2 - God is an eternal Spirit.

“God is a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth” (John 4:24).

KEY 3 - God is holy.

“And you shall be holy unto Me: for I the LORD am holy, and have severed you from other people, that you should be Mine” (Leviticus 20:26 ET).

KEY 4 - The spiritual universe was created before the material one.

“Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if you have understanding. Who has laid the measures thereof, if you know? or who has stretched the line upon it? Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? or who laid the corner stone thereof; When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?” (Job 38:4-7 ET).

KEY 5 - A comparison of Genesis 1:1-2a with Isaiah 45:18 does not justify

the gap theory! It simply shows the earth was created to be inhabited.

“In the beginning God created the heaven (heavens) and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep” (Genesis 1:1-2a).

“For thus says the LORD that created the heavens; God Himself that formed the earth and made it; He has established it, he created it not in vain, He formed it to be inhabited: I am the LORD; and there is none else” (Isaiah 45:18 ET).

KEY 6 - Angels and humanity were the only created beings with a free moral agency.

You can say “I will” or “I will not.” Only the human race and the angels have this God given ability to decide their course of action in all areas of life. This is known as “free moral agency.” This sets you apart from all other living beings God has created. This makes you a very special creation of the True and Living God.

KEY 7 - Did the angels fall before God created this present heavens and earth?

“Hell from beneath is moved for you to meet you at your coming: it stirs up the dead for you, even all the chief ones of the earth; it has raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations. All they shall speak and say unto you, Are you also become weak as we? Are you become like unto us? Your pomp is brought down to the grave, and the noise of your viols (lutes): the worm is spread under you, and the worms cover you. How are you fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how are you cut down to the ground, which did weaken the nations! For you have said in your heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the Most High. Yet you shall be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. They that see you shall narrowly look upon you, and consider you, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners?” (Isaiah 14:9-17 ET).

“And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. ... And there was war in heaven: Michael and his

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceives the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him” (Revelation 12:3, 4, 7-9 ET). See Ezekiel 28:12-19.

KEY 8 - Your spirit is to work in cooperation with God’s Holy Spirit.

“What? Know you not that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit which is in you, which you have of God, and you are not your own? For you are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God’s” (1 Corinthians 6:19, 20 ET).

KEY 9 - The Bible speaks to your spirit.

“For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two- edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. Neither is there any creature that is not manifest (shown) in his sight but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of Him with whom we have to do” (Hebrews 4:12, 13).

KEY 10 - God’s holy angels are ministering spirits to those who will inherit salvation.

“Who makes His angels spirits; His ministers a flaming fire” (Psalm 104:4).
“Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?” (Hebrews 1:14).

“The angel of the LORD encamps around about them that fear Him, and delivers them” (Psalm 34:7 ET).

CHAPTER SUMMARY

The universe is spiritual in nature with a material background. The real, eternal world is the spirit world. You can only be at your best as you give God—Who is the Father (or Creator) of us all—your complete cooperation.

Chapter 1 Review Questions

1. How does God differ from His creation?
2. Get a good Bible concordance and find out how many different kinds of spirit qualities the human race has. There are several of these. Examples: meek spirit, loving spirit, unclean spirit.

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

3. According to Romans 12; Galatians 5:22-26 and 1 Thessalonians 5, what are the characteristics of a Spirit-filled life?
4. According to Romans 7:7-25; 8:3-11; Galatians 5:19-21; 2 Peter 2 and Jude 1:5-16, what are the characteristics of people who hate God?
5. Why is it so important to live a holy life?
6. How do God's holy angels help Spirit-filled people?
7. If you are not living in the Spirit, please accept God's invitation as recorded in Revelation 22:17.—“And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that hears say, Come. And let him that is athirst (thirsty) come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.”

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

One generation shall praise Your works to another, and shall declare Your mighty acts (Psalm 145:4 ET).

CHAPTER 2

THE GENERATIONS

The genealogies of the bible are very important to you. They establish a number of things: like showing you the origin and continuation of everything from the material universe to the inheritance of Jesus Christ. They help you to understand things about your world and yourself you could not find out through scientific investigations. They help you to stay clear of such pitfalls as the evolution of organic and inorganic matter, national boundary disputes, and false Christs.

Are you ready to go with me on a journey back to the beginning?

A. OF THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH

KEY 1 - The universe was created to last forever in a state of perfect bliss.

“And God saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was very good. ...” (Genesis 1:31a). (See Genesis 3 to see the description of the curse placed on the earth because of Adam’s disobedience.)

KEY 2 - The universe in its embryonic state obeyed a set of developmental laws that are not in operation today.

KEY 3 - Genesis 1:1-2:3 and Genesis 2:4-25 are not in conflict with one another.

Genesis 1:2b-2:3 show the sequence of God’s creation and Genesis 2:4- 25 shows how God created Adam and took care of him.

KEY 4 - Genesis 1:1 to 2:25 show the universe in its embryonic state before the curse changed its perfect state.

“In the beginning God created the heaven (heavens) and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day.

“And God said, Let there be a firmament (expanse) in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament (expanse), and divided the waters which were under the firmament (expanse) from the waters which were above the firmament (expanse): and it was so. And God called the firmament (expanse) Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day.

“And God said, Let the waters under the Heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called He Seas: and God saw that it was good. And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the third day.

“And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament (expanse) of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: And let them be for lights in the firmament (expanse) of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: He made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament (expanse) of the heaven to give light upon the earth, And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

“And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that has life, and fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament (expanse) of heaven. And God created great whales, and every living creature that moves, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let fowl multiply in the earth. And the evening and the morning were the fifth day.

“And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind: and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creeps upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that it was good.

“And God said, Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness: and let them

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

have dominion (rule) over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps upon the earth. So God created man in His Own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moves upon the earth.

“And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat (food). And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creeps upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat (food): and it was so. And God saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

“Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended his work which He had made; and He rested on the seventh day from all his work which He had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it He had rested from all his work which God created and made.

“These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens, And every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew: for the LORD God had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was not a man to till the ground. But there went up a mist from the earth, and watered the whole face of the ground. And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

“And the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there He put the man whom He had formed. And out of the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil.

“And a river went out of Eden to water the garden; and from thence it was parted, and became into four heads. The name of the first is Pison: that is it which compasses the whole land of Havilah, where there is gold; And the gold of that land is good: there is bdellium and the onyx stone. And the name of the second river is Gihon: the same is it that compasses the whole land of Ethiopia. And the

name of the third river is Hiddekel: that is it which goes toward the east of Assyria. And the fourth river is Euphrates.

“And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, you shall not eat of it: for in the day that you eat thereof you shall surely die.

“And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him. And out of the ground the LORD God formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air; and brought them unto Adam to see what he would call them: and whatsoever Adam called every living creature, that was the name thereof. And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field; but for Adam there was not found an help meet for him. And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and He took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made He a woman, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed” (Genesis 1-2 ET).

KEY 5 - The universe was created out of nothing by the Word of God.

“Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear” (Hebrews 11:3).

KEY 6 - The universe was systematically created.

The 6 days of creation—as shown in Genesis 1:5, 8, 13, 19, 23, 31—gives you a record of an orderly creation. Each day of the creation week built on the one before it, thus allowing God to set the next phase of His creation into operation on the following day.

KEY 7 - God created everything in its mature state all at once.

God said it, and it was so. Also, study the verses above that show God saying, “Let there be,” followed by, “it was so,” or “God made” (See Genesis 1:3.)

KEY 8 – Humanity was the crowning creation of God.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

“When I consider Your heavens, the work of Your fingers, the moon and the stars, which You have ordained; what is man, that You are mindful of him? and the son of man, that You visit him? For You have made him a little lower than the angels, and have crowned him with glory and honor. You made him to have dominion over the works of Your hands; You have put all things under his feet: All sheep and oxen, yea (yes), and the beasts of the field; The fowl of the air, and the fish of the sea, and whatsoever passes through the paths of the seas. O LORD our Lord, how excellent is Your name in all the earth!” (Psalm 8:3-9 ET). (See also Hebrews 2:6-18.)

KEY 9 - God created the present universe in six “creative days” less than 7,000 years ago.

“For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it” (Exodus 20:11).

“It is a sign between me and the children of Israel for ever: for in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day He rested, and was refreshed” (Exodus 31:17).

KEY 10 - The universe was created to bring honor and glory to God.

“The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament shows His handiwork. Day unto day utters speech, and night unto night shows knowledge. There is no speech nor language, where their voice is not heard. Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world” (Psalm 19:1-4a ET).

“You are worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power: for You have created all things, and for Your pleasure they are and were created” (Revelation 4:11 ET).

KEY 11 - The universe is very large, but not infinite.

“But will God indeed dwell on the earth? behold, the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain you; how much less this house that I have built?” (1 Kings 8:27 ET).

“You, even You, are) LORD alone; You have made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and You preserve them all; and the host of heaven worships You” (Nehemiah 9:6 ET).

KEY 12 - The universe had a beginning.

“In the beginning God created the heaven (heavens) and the earth” (Genesis 1:1).

KEY 13 - The earth is circular.

“It is He that sits upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretches out the heavens as a curtain, and spreads them out as a tent to dwell in: That brings the princes to nothing; He makes the judges of the earth as vanity” (Isaiah 40:22, 23 ET).

KEY 14 - The sun is moving in a regular circuit.

“Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world. In them have He set a tabernacle for the sun, Which is as a bridegroom coming out of his chamber, and rejoices as a strong man to run a race. His going forth is from the end of the heaven, and his circuit unto the ends of it: and there is nothing hid from the heat thereof” (Psalm 19:4-6 ET).

KEY 15 - Scientific themes—which have been of interest to the human race from the dawn of creation—are correctly stated in the Bible.

A Partial List of “Scientific Themes in the Bible.”

- The Creation – Genesis 1, 2
- The curse of sin – Genesis 3
- National boundaries – Genesis 10
- Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah – Genesis 19
- Genetics – Genesis 31:10
- Drunkenness is an obsession – Proverbs 23:29-35
- There is a time for everything – Ecclesiastes 3:1-11
- Various themes – Job 38-42 and Psalm 104

There is science in the spiritual areas of our life as well as in the material aspects. You will find the Bible covers every area of your being—body, soul and spirit. The prophecies and laws of the Bible can be viewed in a scientific way. As sure as breaking the law of gravity causes you trouble, so breaking the moral laws of the Bible causes you trouble.

APPLICATION OF THIS TRUTH

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

1. As Creator of the universe, God is to be obeyed and worshiped.
2. God alone is the One Who can tell you how He created His universe.
3. It is certain the universe did not create itself.
4. If you cannot accept the Bible account of special creation, how can you know the rest of the Bible is true?
5. If God has lied to you about creation, then how can you be sure He has told you the truth about redemption?
6. You must accept the entire Bible or none at all.
7. The facts of good science are in perfect agreement with the Bible's creation account.
8. You should not try to bring the Bible down to the whims of those who are desirous to discredit everything they cannot understand.

Accept the Bible as the Word of God. Let God be true even though everyone or everything may appear to say just the opposite of what He is saying. Then follow His instructions for your life as it is revealed to you in His Word. You do not have to explain everything. Enjoy God and all He is doing for you. Be assured God loves you and has a wonderful plan for your life. You are safe in the arms of Jesus. The Bible is completely trustworthy for every area of your life!

B. OF ADAM

KEY 1 - God specially created Adam and Eve without sin to have perfect fellowship with Him.

“So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them” (Genesis 1:27).

“And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul” (Genesis 2:7).

“And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and He took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made He a woman, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man” (Genesis 2:21-23).

KEY 2 - Adam was placed in the garden of Eden (in the area of the Black

Sea).

“And the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there He put the man whom He had formed. And out of the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil. And a river went out of Eden to water the garden; and from thence it was parted, and became into four heads. The name of the first is Pison (lost in the flood-possibly the Jordan?): that is it which (compassed the whole land of Havilah, where there is gold; And the gold of that land is good: there is bdellium and the onyx stone. And the name of the second river is Gihon (Nile): the same is it that compassed the whole land of Ethiopia. And the name of the third river is Hiddekel (Tigris): that is it which goes toward the east of Assyria. And the fourth river is Euphrates. And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it” (Genesis 2:8-15 ET).

KEY 3 - Adam and Eve were the first parents of the human race.

“And Adam called his wife’s name Eve; because she was the mother of all living” (Genesis 3:20).

KEY 4 - Adam was the delegated head of God’s earthly kingdom.

“And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish (fill up) the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion (rule) over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moves upon the earth” (Genesis 1:28 ET).

KEY 5 - Adam’s privileges were based on his obedience to God.

“And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, you shall not eat of it: for in the day that you eat thereof you shall surely die” (Genesis 2:16-17 ET).

KEY 6 - Adam and Eve fell into sin and out of fellowship with God.

“And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat” (Genesis 3:6).

“And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of Us, to know good and evil: and now, lest (in case) he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So He

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

drove out the man; and He placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life” (Genesis 3:22-24).

KEY 7 - Adam’s disobedience brought sin and death to the whole human race.

“And unto Adam He said, Because you have hearkened unto the voice of your wife, and have eaten of the tree, of which I commanded you, saying, You shall not eat of it: cursed is the ground for your sake; in sorrow shall you eat of it all the days of your life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to you; and you shall eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of your face shall you eat bread, till you return unto the ground; for out of it were you taken: for dust you are, and unto dust shall you return” (Genesis 3:17-19 ET).

“And Adam lived an hundred and thirty years, and begat a son in his own likeness, after his image; and called his name Seth: ... And all the days that Adam lived were nine hundred and thirty years: and he died” (Genesis 5:3, 5).

KEY 8 - God has provided a way for the human race to get back in fellowship with Him.

“Much more then, being now justified by His blood, we shall be saved from wrath through Him. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of His Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by His life. And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.

“Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned: (For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law. Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude (likeness) of Adam’s transgression, who is the figure of Him that was to come. But not as the offense, so also is the free gift. For if through the offense of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, have abounded unto many. And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: for the judgment was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offenses unto justification. For if by one man’s offense death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by One, Jesus Christ.) Therefore as by the offense of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of One the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life. For

as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of One shall many be made righteous. Moreover the law entered, that the offense might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound: That as sin has reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord" (Romans 5:9-21 ET).

KEY 9 - When God clothed Adam and Eve with skins, He started animal sacrifice as a temporary atonement for sin until Jesus' death on the cross replaced it.

"Unto Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God make coats of skins, and clothed them" (Genesis 3:21).

APPLICATION OF THIS TRUTH

1. The evil things people do are inspired by the sin nature we all inherited.
2. Sickness and death are results of the curse placed on sin.
3. The wages of sin is still death—both physical and spiritual.
4. God has made a way to destroy sin and death through Jesus Christ.

Be involved in the work of the Lord. In the first place, make sure you are in the experience of entire sanctification, as explained fully in "**The Way of Salvation**" below. After you know you have your life right with God, join a fellowship of Christians in a Bible-believing church that is zealous of good works. Learn how to express your love to God and others. Back up your word with godly actions. Stand by God and His leaders.

You cannot change the past, but you can let God work in your life in the present to insure a better future for you and your children.

The Way of Salvation

When we are discussing salvation, we are talking about the main message of the Bible.

- 1. You must realize your need of being saved. If you think you can make it through life without God or anyone else's help, you will never be saved.
- 2. Before you can be saved, you need to see your lost condition. (Read Romans 5.)

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

- 3. You need to realize you are away from God with no way of getting to Him without His direct intervention. Regardless of what you or anyone else does for you, you cannot be saved without God’s forgiveness and love. (Read the Book of Romans found in the Christian Bible.)
- 4. The answer to this problem has been worked out in a wonderful way through what Jesus has done for you. He took your guilt upon himself and paid the price for your redemption. It is only through Jesus you find the way to be saved. (See Acts 4:12 and John 14:6.)
- 5. You do not work your way into salvation. Your good works will not save you. You need to accept what God has done for you through Jesus. (Read Proverbs 28:13, Ephesians 2:8-10, 1 John 1:9.)
- 6. When you are saved, you become a new creation with a desire to please God. (See 2 Corinthians 5:17-21.)

NOTE: A detailed discussion of this subject is found in **Formulating a Christian Theology** under Salvation. As you will see in **Formulating a Christian Theology** found at the end of Chapter 13, God saves you from the power and penalty of sin in this life. He saves you from the presence of sin when you are taken up into heaven to live with Him either by death or by the rapture.

C. OF NOAH

KEY 1 - Noah’s generation was filled with great wickedness.

“And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually” (Genesis 6:5).

KEY 2 - Noah was perfect in his generation.

“These are the generations of Noah: Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations, and Noah walked with God” (Genesis 6:9).

KEY 3 - God will never let sin go on endlessly without judging it.

“And the LORD said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years” (Genesis 6:3).

“And it repented the LORD that He had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. And the LORD said, I will destroy man whom I have created

from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repents Me that I have made them” (Genesis 6:6-7 ET).

KEY 4 - Noah found grace with God because of his obedience.

“But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD” (Genesis 6:8).

“And the LORD said unto Noah, Come you and all your house into the ark; for you have I seen righteous before Me in this generation” (Genesis 7:1 ET).

“And Noah did according to all that the LORD commanded him” (Genesis 7:5).

KEY 5 - The sons of God took wives for themselves from the daughters of men.

“And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, that the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose. ... There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown” (Genesis 6:1-2, 4).

KEY 6 - These “sons of God” were most likely fallen angels.

“For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment” (2 Peter 2:4).

“And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, He have reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day” (Jude 1:6 ET).

KEY 7 - As it was in the days of Noah so it will be in the end times.

“But as the days of Noe (Noah) were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe (Noah) entered into the ark. And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be” (Matthew 24:37-39).

KEY 8 - Violence and moral perversions were unchecked in Noah’s time.

“And Noah begat three sons, Shem, Ham, and Japheth. The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence. And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth. And God said unto Noah, The end of all flesh is come before me; for the earth is filled with violence through them; and, behold, I will destroy them with the earth” (Genesis 6:10-13).

KEY 9 - God instructed Noah to build an ark for his salvation.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

“Make you an ark of gopher wood; rooms shall you make in the ark, and shall pitch it within and without with pitch. And this is the fashion which you shall make it of: The length of the ark shall be three hundred cubits, the breadth of it fifty cubits, and the height of it thirty cubits. A window shall you make to the ark, and in a cubit shall you finish it above; and the door of the ark shall you set in the side thereof; with lower, second, and third stories shall you make it. And, behold, I, even I, do bring a flood of waters upon the earth, to destroy all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; and every thing that is in the earth shall die. But with you will I establish My covenant; and you shall come into the ark, you, and your sons, and your wife, and your sons’ wives with you” (Genesis 6:14-18 ET).

“By faith Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith” (Hebrews 11:7). See 1 Peter 3:20.

KEY 10 - Noah was a preacher of righteousness.

“And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly” (2 Peter 2:5).

KEY 11 - Noah was to bring animals into the ark with himself and his family.

“And of every living thing of all flesh, two of every sort shall you bring into the ark, to keep them alive with you; they shall be male and female. Of fowls after their kind, and of cattle after their kind, of every creeping thing of the earth after his kind, two of every sort shall come unto you, to keep them alive. And take you unto you of all food that is eaten, and you shall gather it to you; and it shall be for food for you, and for them” (Genesis 6:19-21 ET). (See Genesis 7:1-10, 13-16.)

KEY 12 – The floodwaters were from above and below the earth.

“In the six hundredth year of Noah’s life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened. And the rain was upon the earth forty days and forty nights” (Genesis 7:11-12).

KEY 13 - The earth of Noah’s time was completely destroyed with the flood.

(A careful look at the Bible record will show this was not a local flood. This was a worldwide flood. Anyone who thinks this was a local flood is loco.)

“And the flood was forty days upon the earth; and the waters increased, and bare up the ark, and it was lift up above the earth. ... And all flesh died that moved upon the earth, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of beast, and of every creeping

thing that creeps upon the earth, and every man: All in whose nostrils was the breath of life, of all that was in the dry land, died. And every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground, both man, and cattle, and the creeping things, and the fowl of the heaven; and they were destroyed from the earth: and Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark” (Genesis 7:17, 21-23 ET).

“For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished” (2 Peter 3:5-6).

KEY 14 - The floodwaters covered the mountains of the earth.

“And the waters prevailed exceedingly upon the earth; and all the high hills, that were under the whole heaven, were covered. Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail; and the mountains were covered” (Genesis 7:19-20).

KEY 15 - The floodwaters prevailed on the earth for 150 days.

“And the waters prevailed upon the earth an hundred and fifty days” (Genesis 7:24).

KEY 16 - God stopped the waters and dried up the land.

“And God remembered Noah, and every living thing, and all the cattle that was with him in the ark: and God made a wind to pass over the earth, and the waters assuaged; The fountains also of the deep and the windows of heaven were stopped, and the rain from heaven was restrained; And the waters returned from off the earth continually: and after the end of the hundred and fifty days the waters were abated” (Genesis 8:1-3). See Genesis 8:5-19.

KEY 17 - The ark is on the mountains of Ararat.

“And the ark rested in the seventh month, on the seventeenth day of the month, upon the mountains of Ararat” (Genesis 8:4).

KEY 18 - God will never again destroy the earth with a worldwide flood, even though we have local flood disasters all the time.

“And the LORD smelled a sweet savor; and the LORD said in his heart, I will not again curse the ground any more for man’s sake; for the imagination of man’s heart is evil from his youth; neither will I again smite any more every thing living, as I have done. While the earth remains, seed time and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease” (Genesis 8:21-22 ET).

KEY 19 - God made a covenant with Noah and his descendants.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

“And God spoke unto Noah, and to his sons with him, saying, And I, behold, I establish My covenant (agreement) with you, and with your seed after you; And with every living creature that is with you, of the fowl, of the cattle, and of every beast of the earth with you; from all that go out of the ark, to every beast of the earth. And I will establish My covenant (agreement) with you, neither shall all flesh be cut off (destroyed) any more by the waters of a flood; neither shall there any more be a flood to destroy the earth. And God said, This is the token of the covenant (agreement) which I make between Me and you and every living creature that is with you, for perpetual generations: I do set My bow (rainbow) in the cloud, and it shall be for a token of a covenant between Me and the earth. And it shall come to pass, when I bring a cloud over the earth, that the bow (rainbow) shall be seen in the cloud: And I will remember My covenant, which is between Me and you and every living creature of all flesh; and the waters shall no more become a flood to destroy all flesh. And the bow (rainbow) shall be in the cloud; and I will look upon it, that I may remember the everlasting covenant between God and every living creature of all flesh that is upon the earth. And God said unto Noah, This is the token of the covenant, which I have established between Me and all flesh that is upon the earth” (Genesis 9:8-17). See Genesis 9:1-7.

KEY 20 - You are a descendant of one of Noah’s three sons.

“And the sons of Noah, who went forth of the ark, were Shem, and Ham, and Japheth: and Ham is the father of Canaan. These are the three sons of Noah: and of them was the whole earth overspread (populated)” (Genesis 9:18-19).

KEY 21 - It did not rain before the flood.

“And every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew: for the LORD God had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was not a man to till the ground. But there went up a mist (vapor) from the earth, and watered the whole face (surface) of the ground” (Genesis 2:5-6).

KEY 22 - Man and animals were vegetarians (raw-food vegans) before the flood.

“And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed (vegetables), which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat (food). And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creeps upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat (food): and it was so” (Genesis 1:29-30 ET).

KEY 23 - The fermentation process did not exist before the flood.

“And Noah began to be a husbandman, and he planted a vineyard: And he drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent” (Genesis 9:20-21). (Noah did not sin here. Noah did not know you could get drunk on fruit juice. The flood set up the fermentation process.) See Genesis 9:22-29 for the consequence.

KEY 24 - Clean and unclean animals were known in Noah’s day.

“Of every clean beast you shall take to you by sevens, the male and his female: and of beasts that are not clean by two, the male and his female. Of fowls also of the air by sevens, the male and the female; to keep seed (offspring) alive upon the face of all the earth” (Genesis 7:2, 3 ET).

KEY 25 - People lived much longer before the flood.

“And Noah lived after the flood three hundred and fifty years. And all the days of Noah were nine hundred and fifty years: and he died” (Genesis 9:28-29). See Genesis 5:3-32; 11:10-32.

APPLICATION OF THIS TRUTH

1. There was a person named Noah who found grace in God’s sight.
2. Noah did build an ark to save his household and land animals.
3. God did send a flood that destroyed all land life that was not with Noah in the ark.
4. The flood was a judgment on the wickedness of humanity.
5. The earth before the flood was different from this present earth.
6. The flood is an example of God’s wrath on sin and rebellion.
7. Every human on this earth is a descendant of one of Noah’s three sons.

You need to realize your common origin with everyone else, and treat them as part of your family. You need to love everyone. If you do this, you will live at peace with everyone. You will also work to help people, less privileged than you, to make the best out of life. You will take the gospel of Jesus to the ends of the earth in word and deed. If you expect to escape the coming judgment on the sins of your day, you will need to live for God. You will need to seek God and do His will for your life.

D. OF THE SONS OF NOAH

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

KEY 1 - National boundaries were set after the flood through Noah's three sons (Shem, Ham and Japheth) to prevent a centralized, one world government. (See Genesis 10 and Jeremiah 17:9.)

KEY 2 - There was one language over all the earth before the Lord changed it at the Tower of Babel. (See Genesis 11:1-9.)

KEY 3 - The language change was used to separate people into different national areas on the earth. (See Genesis 10:1-11:9.)

KEY 4 - Worship went from monotheism to polytheism to pantheism. (Compare Romans 1:18-32 with Genesis 2:15-11:9.)

KEY 5 - The life span decreased steadily after the flood. (Compare the generation of Shem in Genesis 11:10-32 to the generations of Adam in Genesis 5.)

KEY 6 - If you are not a good manager of what God gives you, only He has a right to take it from you and give it to someone else.

APPLICATION OF THIS TRUTH

1. There is nothing of an evolutionary nature in this account.
2. God established national boundaries for the development of an orderly society.
3. Monotheism preceded the perverted forms of polytheistic and pantheistic worship.
4. "Nature religions" are perversions of the one true religion.
5. God regulates the affairs of nations today.

Take time to study the Scriptures listed above. Compare this account with the evolutionary account and you will see it does not match. As a follower of the living God, you are to believe the Bible account and act accordingly.

You need to learn to respect the boundaries God has given you. Do not seek to change the present boundaries for your own selfish interests. Work toward getting people to God within their respective boundaries. Teach people how to minister to their own people.

E. OF TERAH AND OF ISRAEL

KEY 1 - These genealogies are here to show you the origin of the Jews.

KEY 2 - Abraham was the son of Terah.

KEY 3 - Abraham was the father (foundation) of the Israeli nation.

“Now the LORD had said unto Abram, Get you out of your country, and from your kindred, and from your father’s house, unto a land that I will show you: And I will make of you a great nation, and I will bless you, and make your name great; and you shall be a blessing: And I will bless them that bless you, and curse him that curses you: and in you shall all families of the earth be blessed” (Genesis 12:1-3 ET).

F. OF JESUS CHRIST

KEY 1- The genealogies are in the Bible to show you God kept His promise to give you a Redeemer with a human/Divine nature.

“But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth His Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons” (Galatians 4:4-5 ET).

KEY 2 - Human genealogies are of no use to you now.

Their purpose has been fulfilled through Jesus Christ, your Lord and Redeemer.

“But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain” (Titus 3:9).

Chapter 2 Review Questions

1. What does the Bible say about:
 - a. the creation of the universe,
 - b. the flood,
 - c. your first parents,
 - d. sin and the sin nature,
 - e. ages of people before and after the flood?
2. According to the Bible, how long did it take God to create the universe?
3. According to the Bible, was the flood a general or local one?
4. Is the Bible a science book? Does the Bible cover scientific subjects?
5. How accurate is the Bible when it comes to scientific themes?
6. What does the Bible tell you about national boundaries? Are these in effect today?
7. Were Adam and Eve real people?
8. Where was the Garden of Eden?
9. What is the purpose of the human genealogies of the Bible?

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

10. Does Jesus have a human ancestry?
11. How do you know Jesus is the Redeemer God promised to give you?

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

But you are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels, To the general assemble and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaks better things than that of Abel (Hebrews 12: 22-24 ET).

CHAPTER 3

THE COVENANTS

Covenants are very important. They are agreements or contracts, which are made between two or more people. The eight contracts below are contracts God has made with the human race throughout the ages. They involve all of us. You need to understand these contracts to see what God expects of you and what He has promised to do for you.

Are you ready to study God's relationship with the human race through His various covenants?

A. THE EDENIC COVENANT:

KEY 1 - was universal in nature;

KEY 2 - was conditional;

“And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moves upon the earth. And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat (food)” (Genesis 1:28-29 ET).

“And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, you shall not eat of it: for in the day that you eat thereof you shall surely die” (Genesis 2:15-17 ET).

KEY 3 - was broken by Adam and Eve through an act of disobedience.

“And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat” (Genesis 3:6).

B. THE ADAMIC COVENANT:

KEY 1 - is the second universal covenant;

KEY 2 - was an unconditional one;

KEY 3 - will be in effect until the second coming of Jesus.

“And the LORD God said to the serpent, Because you have done this, you are cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon your belly shall you go, and dust shall you eat all the days of your life: And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her seed: it shall bruise your head and you shall bruise his head.

“Unto the woman He said, I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; in sorrow you shall bring forth children; and your desire shall be to your husband, and he shall rule over you.

“And unto Adam He said, Because you have hearkened unto the voice of your wife, and have eaten of the tree, of which I commanded you, saying, You shall not eat of it: cursed is the ground for your sake; in sorrow shall you eat of it all the days of your life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to you; and you shall eat the herb (vegetables) of the field; In the sweat of your face shall you eat bread, till you return unto the ground; for out of it were you taken: for dust you are, and unto dust shall you return” (Genesis 3:14-19).

C. THE NOAHIC COVENANT:

KEY 1 - was the third universal one;

KEY 2 - was an unconditional one;

KEY 3 - will continue while there is harvest time;

KEY 4 - proves the flood was worldwide in nature.

“And the LORD smelled a sweet savour; and the LORD said in His heart, I will not again curse the ground any more for man’s sake; for the imagination of man’s heart is evil from his youth; neither will I again smite any more every thing living, as I have done. While the earth remains, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat,

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease” (Genesis 8:21-22). See also Genesis 9.

D. THE ABRAHAMIC COVENANT:

KEY 1 - is the first of the theocratic (the rule of God) covenants;

KEY 2 - is unconditional;

KEY 3 - is universal in nature;

KEY 4 - is the basis for all the other theocratic covenants, which follow it.

“Now the LORD had said unto Abram, Get you out of you country, and from you kindred, and from you father’s house, unto a land that I will show you: And I will make of you a great nation, and I will bless you, and make you name great; and you shall be a blessing: And I will bless them that bless you, and curse him that curses you: and in you shall all families of the earth be blessed” (Genesis 12:1-3).

E. THE MOSAIC COVENANT:

KEY 1 - is the second of the theocratic covenants;

KEY 2 - is conditional;

KEY 3 - is a covenant of law and thus has to do with your conduct toward God and others;

KEY 4 - was a schoolmaster to bring you to Christ.

“And Moses went up unto God, and the LORD called unto him out of the mountain, saying, Thus shall you say to the house of Jacob, and tell the children of Israel; you have seen what I did unto the Egyptians, and how I bare you on eagles’ wings, and brought you unto Myself. Now therefore, if you will obey My voice indeed, and keep My covenant (agreement), then you shall be a peculiar treasure unto Me above all people: for all the earth is Mine: And you shall be unto Me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation. These are the words which you shall speak unto the children of Israel” (Exodus 19:3-6). See Exodus 19:5-8.

“Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith” (Galatians 3:24).

F. THE PALESTINIAN COVENANT:

KEY 1 - is the third of the theocratic covenants;
KEY 2 - has a conditional and unconditional side to it;
KEY 3 - is for the children of Israel;
KEY 4 - will be fully realized during the 1000-year reign of Christ.

G. THE DAVIDIC COVENANT:

KEY 1 - is the fourth of the theocratic covenants;
KEY 2 - has a conditional and unconditional side;
KEY 3 - was made to David, the second king of Israel.
KEY 4 - will be fully realized during the 1000-year reign of Jesus.

H. THE NEW COVENANT:

KEY 1 - is the New Testament of your Holy Bible;
KEY 2 - is the fifth of the theocratic covenants;
KEY 3 - is universal;
KEY 4 - is for time and eternity;
KEY 5 - removes the sin problem;
KEY 6 - is mediated by Jesus Christ;
KEY 7 - fulfills all the above covenants.

Chapter 3 Study Questions

1. After reading Genesis 1:28-29 and Genesis 2:15-17, write out the terms of the Edenic covenant. How does this apply to you?
2. After reading Genesis 3:14-21; Isaiah 11:6-10 and Romans 8:18-23, write out the terms of the Adamic covenant. How does this apply to you?
3. After reading Genesis 8:20-9:19, write out the terms of the Noahic covenant. How does this apply to you?
4. After reading Genesis 12:1-3; 13:14-17; 15:1-7, 19-21 and Genesis 17:1-8, write out the terms of the Abrahamic covenant. How does this apply to you?
5. After reading Exodus 19:5-8; 20:1-26; 21:1-24:11; 24:12-31:18 and Galatians 3:17-19, 22-24, write out the terms of the Mosaic covenant. How does this apply to you?

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

6. After reading Deuteronomy 27:1-30:20, write out the terms of the Palestinian covenant. How does this apply to you?
7. After reading 2 Samuel 7:4-17; Jeremiah 22:24-30; Matthew 1:1-17 and Luke 3:23-38, write out the terms of the Davidic covenant. How does this apply to you?
8. After reading Jeremiah 31:31-34; Hebrews 8:6-13 and Hebrews 12:24, write out the terms of the New Covenant. How does this apply to you? Read the whole Books of Hebrews and Romans to get the full picture of the New Covenant.
9. What covenants are you under now?
10. What is the difference between a conditional and unconditional covenant?
11. What is a theocratic covenant?
12. How do the covenants fit in with the dispensations? See Ephesians 3:2.
13. Has humanity kept their part of the covenant? Has God?
14. Have you taken the New Covenant seriously in your personal life?

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good (Romans 7:12).

CHAPTER 4

THE LAW

The law covered every area of life. Every person was required to keep the whole law. Because of sin in the heart, people were unable to keep the law and many times lost out with God. Jesus came to provide a way to keep the law. Today you are required to keep the moral laws. These are kept through your personal relationship with God. Not only can your sins be forgiven but they can also be cleansed. You will see this more clearly when you get to the chapter on the gospel of Jesus Christ.

Are you ready to apply the law of God to every area of your life?

Let us begin your journey by reading Psalm 119!

Psalm 119 (ET)

Ⲗ ALEPH

“Blessed are the undefiled in the way, who walk in the law of the LORD! Blessed are they that keep His testimonies, they will seek Him with the whole heart! They also do no iniquity: they walk in His ways. You have commanded us to keep Your precepts diligently. Oh, that my ways were directed to keep Your statutes! Then I would not be ashamed when I keep all Your commandments. When I learn Your righteous judgments I will praise You with uprightness of heart. I will keep Your statutes. Oh, do not utterly forsake me.

Ⲓ BETH

“With what shall a young man cleanse his way? By taking heed according to Your word. I have sought You with all my heart. Oh, do not let me wander from Your commandments! I have hid Your word in my heart, therefore I shall not sin against You. Blessed are You, O LORD! Teach me Your statutes. I have declared all the judgments of Your mouth with my lips. I have rejoiced in the way of Your testimonies as in all riches. I will meditate in Your precepts, and I will look at

Your paths. I will delight myself in Your statutes. I will not forget Your word.

ג GIMEL

“Deal bountifully with Your servant, that I may live, and keep Your word. Open my eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of Your law. I am a stranger in the earth. Do not hide Your commandments from me. My soul has been broken for longing for Your judgments at all seasons. You have rebuked the proud that are cursed, who wander from Your commandments. Remove reproach and contempt from me, for I have kept Your testimonies. Princes also sit and speak against me: but Your servant will meditate in Your statutes. Your testimonies also are my delights and my counselors.

ט DALETH

“My soul has cleaved to the dust. Keep me alive according to Your word. I have declared my ways and You have answered me. Teach me Your statutes. Make me consider the way of Your precepts: and I will meditate in Your wondrous works. My soul melts from heaviness: strengthen me according to Your word. Remove the way of falsehood from me, and grant me Your law graciously. I have chosen the way of faithfulness. I have held Your judgments. I have cleaved to Your testimonies. O LORD, do not put me to shame. I will run the way of Your commandments, for You will enlarge my heart.

ה HE

“Teach me, O LORD, the way of Your statutes; and I will preserve it to the end. Make me to consider Your law, and I will preserve and observe it with my whole heart. Guide me in the path of Your commandments, for I delight in it. Incline my heart unto Your testimonies, and not to covetousness. Turn my eyes away from beholding vanity. Keep me alive in Your way. Establish Your servant in Your word, who is devoted to Your fear. Make my reproach which I feared pass from me, for Your judgments are good. Behold, I have longed for Your precepts; make me live in Your righteousness.

ו VAV

“And Your mercies and Your salvation shall come to me, O LORD, according to Your word. And I shall have a word to answer him who reproaches me, because I have confidence in Your word. And do not take the word of truth utterly out of my mouth, because I have hope in Your judgments. And I will keep Your law continually, forever and ever. And I will walk in a wide place, because I seek Your

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

precepts. And I will speak of Your testimonies before kings, and not be ashamed. And I will delight myself in Your commandments, which I have loved. And I will lift up my hands unto Your commandments which I have loved; and I will meditate in Your statutes.

י ZAYIN

“Remember the word to Your servant, upon which You have made me hope. Because Your word has kept me alive it has been my comfort in my affliction. I have not forsaken Your law even though the proud have held me up to utter contempt. I have remembered Your judgments of old, O LORD; and have comforted myself. Horror gripped me when I saw the wicked forsaking Your law. Your statutes are psalms (songs) to me in the house of my pilgrimage. I have remembered Your name in the night, O LORD, and I will keep Your law. Because I have kept Your precepts this has become mine.

ן HETH

“LORD, You are my portion; I have said I would keep Your words. I entreated Your favor with my whole heart; be gracious to me according to Your word. I thought on my ways, and turned my feet to Your testimonies. I made haste, without delay, to keep Your commandments. The cords of the wicked surrounded me: but I have not forgotten Your law. All throughout the night I will rise to give thanks to You, because of Your righteous judgments. I am a companion of all those who fear You and keep Your precepts. The earth, O LORD, is full of Your mercy; teach me Your statutes.

ו TETH

“You have done good with Your servant, O LORD, according to Your word. Teach me good judgment and knowledge: for I have believed Your commandments. Before I was humbled I was ignorant, but now I keep Your word. You are good, and do good; teach me Your statutes. The proud have forged falsehood against me, but I will keep Your precepts with my whole heart. Their heart is as fat as lard, but I delight myself in Your law. It was good for me to be humbled, because I will learn Your statutes. The law of Your mouth is better than thousands of gold and silver to me.

י YOD

“Your hands have made me and established me: give me discernment so that I may learn Your commandments. Those who fear You will be glad when they see

me; because I have hoped in Your word. I know, O LORD, Your judgments are right, and in Your faithfulness You have humbled me. Let, I pray, Your mercy be a comfort to me, according to Your word unto Your servant. Your tender mercies shall come unto me and I shall live, because Your law is my delight. The proud shall be ashamed, because they falsely perverted me: I will meditate in Your precepts. Those who fear You and know Your testimonies shall turn to me. My heart shall be upright in Your statutes; therefore I will not be ashamed.

⊃ KAPH

“My soul pines away for Your salvation: I hope in Your word. My eyes fail for Your word, saying, When will You comfort me? For I am become like a bottle in the smoke; yet I do not forget Your statutes. How many are the days of Your servant? When will You execute judgment on those who persecute me? The proud have dug ditches for me, which are not according to Your law. All Your commandments are faithfulness; they have falsely pursued me. Help me! A little longer and they will consume me from the earth; but I will not forsake Your precepts. Keep me alive according to Your mercy, and I will keep the testimony of Your mouth.

⌈ LAMED

“O LORD, Your word is settled in the heavens for ever. Your faithfulness is from generation to generation: You have established the earth, and it has stood. To this day they stand according to Your judgments: because all of them are Your servants. If Your law had not been my delight, I would have perished in my affliction. I will never forget Your precepts: because by them You have kept me alive. I am Yours, save me; for I have sought Your precepts. The wicked have expected to destroy me: but I will consider Your testimonies. I have seen the end to all perfection: but Your commandment is very extensive.

⌋ MEM

“How I love Your law! I meditate on it all day. Through Your commandments You have made me wiser than my enemies: Or they (your commandments) are ever with me. I have more understanding than all my teachers: because I meditate on Your testimonies. I understand more than the ancients (with years of experience), because I have kept Your precepts. I have withheld my feet from every path of evil, that I might keep Your word. I have not departed from Your judgments: for You have taught me. How sweet are Your words to my taste! Better than honey to

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

my mouth!

Through Your precepts I gained understanding: therefore I hate every path of falsehood.

י NUN

“Your word is a lamp to my feet, and a light to my path. I have sworn and determined to keep the judgments of Your righteousness. I was very much humbled: keep me alive, O LORD, according unto Your word. I beg of you to accept the free will offerings of my mouth, O LORD, and teach me Your judgments. My soul is in my hand continually: yet I do not forget Your law. The wicked have placed a trap for me: yet I do not wander from Your precepts. I have inherited Your testimonies for ever: for they are the rejoicing of my heart. I have inclined my heart to always perform Your statutes, to the end.

ד SAMEK

“I hate questionable thoughts: but I love Your law. You are my hiding place and my shield: I hope in Your word. Depart from me, you wicked doers: and I will keep the commandments of my God. Hold me up according to Your word, and I shall live: and do not let me be ashamed of my hope. Hold me up, and I shall be safe: and I will continually look to Your statutes. You have trodden down all those who wander from Your statutes: for their deceit is falsehood. You have put all the wicked of the earth away like dross: therefore I love Your testimonies. My flesh trembles for fear of You; and I fear Your judgments.

ו AYIN

“I have done judgment and righteousness: You will not leave me to my oppressors. Be surety for Your servant for good: do not let the proud oppress me. My eyes have failed for Your salvation, and for the word of Your righteousness. Deal with Your servant according to Your mercy, and teach me Your statutes. I am Your servant; cause me to understand, that I may know Your testimonies. LORD, it is time for You to work: they have made Your law void. Therefore I love Your commandments more than gold; yes, above fine gold. Therefore I esteem all Your precepts to be all right; I have hated every path of falsehood.

פ PE

“Your testimonies are wonderful: therefore my soul preserves them. The opening of Your words will enlighten; causing the simple to understand. I opened my mouth, and panted: for I longed for Your commandments. Turn to me, and be

gracious to me, the way You do to those who love Your name. Establish my steps in Your word: and do not let any iniquity have dominion over me. Redeem me from the oppression of man: and I will keep Your precepts. Make Your face to shine upon Your servant; and teach me Your statutes. Rivers of waters run down from my eyes, because they do not keep Your law.

⚔ SADE

“Righteous are You, O LORD, and upright are Your judgments. Your testimonies, which You have commanded, are righteous and very faithful. My zeal has cut me off, because my enemies have forgotten Your words. Your word is very pure: therefore Your servant loves it. I am little and despised: yet I do not forget Your precepts. Your righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and Your law is the truth. Distress and anguish have found me: yet Your commandments are my delights. Your testimonies are righteousness forever: cause me to understand, and I shall live.

⚔ QOPH

“I cried with my whole heart; answer me, O LORD: I will preserve Your statutes. I called upon You; save me and I shall keep Your testimonies. I rise before twilight and cry for help: I hoped for Your word. My eyes are open in the night watches, to meditate in Your word. Hear my voice according to Your lovingkindness: O LORD, keep me alive according to Your judgment. They that follow after mischief draw near: they are far from Your law. You are near, O LORD; and all Your commandments are truth. Concerning Your testimonies, I have known of old that You have founded them for ever.

⚔ RESH

“See my affliction, and deliver me: I have not forgotten Your law. Plead my cause and redeem me: keep me alive with Your word. Salvation is far from the wicked: for they have not sought Your statutes. Many are Your tender mercies, O LORD: keep me alive according to Your judgments. Many are my pursuers and my enemies; yet I have not declined from Your testimonies. I saw the offenders and was grieved; because they did not keep Your word. Consider how I love Your precepts: keep me alive, O LORD, according to Your loving kindness. The sum of Your word is true: and every one of Your righteous judgments endures for ever.

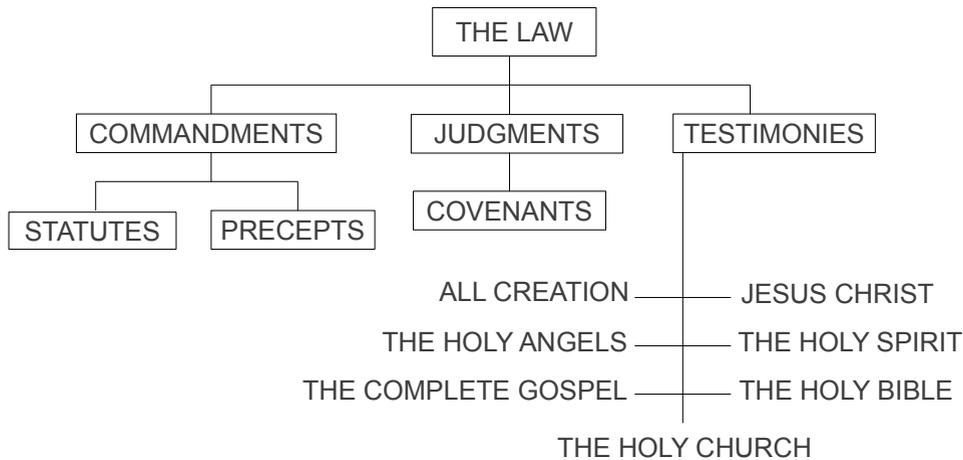
⚔ SIN and ⚔ SHIN

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

“Princes have pursued me without a cause: but my heart stands in awe of Your word. I rejoice at Your word, as one that has found great spoil. I hate and abhor lying: but Your law I love. Seven times a day I praise You, because of Your righteous judgments. Great peace have they who love Your law: and nothing shall make them stumble. LORD, I have waited for Your salvation, and I have done Your commandments. My soul has kept Your testimonies; and I love them very much. I have kept Your precepts and Your testimonies: because all my ways are before You.

ן TAV

“Let my cry come near before You, O LORD: cause me to consider according to Your word. My supplication shall come before You: deliver me according to Your word. My lips will utter praise, for You will teach me Your statutes. My tongue shall answer Your word: for all Your commandments are righteousness. Your hand shall be a help to me; for I have chosen Your precepts. I have longed for Your salvation, O LORD; and Your law is my delight. My soul shall live and praise You; and Your judgments will help me. I have wandered like a perishing sheep; seek Your servant; for I have not forgotten Your commandments.”



The Law Diagrammed

KEY 1 - The law covers every area of your life.

KEY 2 - The moral law (The Ten Commandments) is still in effect today.

KEY 3 - The law is outlined in Exodus through Deuteronomy.

KEY 4 - The law includes a homeland for the children of Israel. (See the book of Joshua.)

KEY 5 - The law cannot do anything with sin in your heart. (See Romans 7:7-25.)

KEY 6 - The law acts as a schoolmaster to bring you to Christ. (See Galatians 3:24.)

KEY 7 - Jesus Christ is the fulfillment of the law. (See Matthew 5:17- 20.)

KEY 8 - The new covenant of grace, brought in by Jesus' finished work of redemption, takes care of the sin problem in your heart. (See Romans 6:1-15.)

Chapter 4 Study Questions

Find the answer to these questions in your Bible in Exodus through Deuteronomy!

1. How was the law given?
2. How much of the law were the people required to keep?
3. Did the law support capital punishment? If so, how was it carried out?
4. Did the law cover personal relationships? Which ones?
5. Did the law have a set way of worshiping God?
6. How did the law deal with sex offenders?
7. How did the law deal with people who did not keep the Ten Commandments?
8. What were the laws concerning sacrifice?
9. What was the law concerning holy convocations?
10. Were there any laws concerning agriculture?
11. What was the law concerning the underprivileged?
12. What were the laws concerning marriage?
13. What was the law concerning slavery?
14. What were the laws dealing with the treatment of other people (foreigners or strangers)?
15. How did the law deal with accidental killing of people?
16. What were the laws concerning the priesthood?
17. What were the regular feast days? Could a person be excluded from these?
18. What were the laws concerning diet?
19. How did the temple figure in with the law?
20. What does Psalm 119 tell you about the law?

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

21. According to the diagram above, what are the three areas of the law?
22. What was the purpose of the law according to Galatians 3:24?
23. How did the law deal with witchcraft?
24. How did the law deal with the dress code?
25. What were the sacrifices of the law supposed to represent?
26. What was the clothing of the priesthood supposed to represent?
27. What were the laws concerning the Sabbaths?
28. How many Sabbaths did the law have?
29. How were the Levites different from the high priest?
30. What did the parts of the tabernacle represent?
31. How can the law best be summarized according to Matthew 22:37-40?
32. Are you supposed to keep the 10 commandments today? How?

Find the answer to these questions in your Bible in Romans through Revelation!

33. What does the law say about tithing? Do Christians tithe?
34. How does the Christian Sabbath differ from the Jewish Sabbaths?
35. How did Jesus fulfill the law?
36. How does Jesus' way of salvation differ from the law?
37. How does Jesus' way of salvation complement the law?
38. Are Christians required to keep the whole law? Which ones do Christians keep? Which ones do not apply to Christians?

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

In those days there was no king in Israel: every man did that which was right in his own eyes (Judges 21:25).

CHAPTER 5

THE JUDGES

The book of judges shows you cannot go against God and come out on top. It also shows you God is willing to forgive if you only ask Him to do so. You would do well to learn from the experiences of the Israelites.

Are you ready to see what the consequences are
when you decide to do what comes naturally?

KEY 1 - A summary of the Israelites' actions toward God during the time of the Judges found in Judges 2:11-19 will set the stage!

“And the children of Israel did evil in the sight of the LORD, and served the Baals. And they forsook the LORD God of their fathers, Who brought them out of the land of Egypt, and followed other gods, (the gods of the people around about them), and bowed themselves to them, and thus provoked the LORD to anger.

“And they forsook the LORD, and served Baal and the Ashtoreths. And the anger of the LORD was hot against Israel, and He delivered them into the hands of spoilers that spoiled them, and He sold them into the hands of their enemies around about, so that they could no longer stand before their enemies. Wherever they went out, the hand of the LORD was against them for harm, as the LORD had specifically said, and as the LORD had so often sworn unto them: and for this reason, they were greatly distressed. Nevertheless the LORD raised judges, which delivered them out of the hand of those that spoiled them. And still they refused to listen to their judges, but they committed spiritual fornication by going after other gods, and bowing themselves to them: they turned quickly out of the way of the commandments of the LORD which their fathers obediently walked in. Thus they forsook the way of their fathers. And when the LORD raised judges for them, the LORD would be with the judges to enable them to deliver Israel from their enemies all the days of the judge: for it grieved the LORD because of their groanings by reason of them that oppressed and vexed them.

“And it came to pass, when the judge was dead, they would return to their

worship of other gods, and become more corrupt than their fathers, in following other gods to serve them, and to bow down unto them; they ceased not from their own doings, nor from their stubborn way” (Judges 2:11-19 ET).

We are no better than Israel. Be assured, if you do not allow God to be the Lord of your life you will be in bondage to some other lord.

BONDAGE I

(Cushan-Rishathaim king of Mesopotamia for 8 years) Israel cried out to the Lord!

DELIVERER - OTHNIEL - Caleb's younger brother.

In Judges 3:10 you are told that the Spirit of the Lord came on him and empowered him to defeat the enemy.

They had rest for 40 years.

When Othniel died, the Israelites went back to their old ways.

BONDAGE II

(Eglon king of Moab, with Ammon and the Amalekites for 18 years)

Israel cried out to the Lord!

DELIVERER - EHUD

In Judges 3:12-30 you observe how Ehud killed king Eglon and led Israel to victory over the Moabites.

SHAMGAR was also in this time period.

They had rest for 80 years.

When Ehud died, the Israelites went back to their old ways.

BONDAGE III

(Jabin king of Canaan for 20 years)

Israel cried out to the Lord!

DELIVERERS - DEBORAH and BARAK

God gave 10,000 men from Zebulum and Naphtali the power to destroy the army of the Canaanites. Sisera, the captain of their army, was killed by Jael (Judges 4:1-5:3).

They had rest for 40 years.

Israel went back to their old ways.

BONDAGE IV

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

(The Midianites, Amalekites and Eastern tribes for 7 years)

The Israelites cried out to the Lord!

This time the Lord advised them to find some other god to help them. Not one of them could help them, so the Lord had mercy on them.

DELIVERER - GIDEON

His first assignment was to destroy the altar of Baal that belonged to his family, and do a sacrifice for God on the same area. Gideon did as he was instructed. The Spirit of the LORD came upon him. He put a couple of fleeces out to make sure he had correctly understood God's direction. At first, he had 32,000 people at his command, but the Lord felt this was too many, so He had Gideon dismiss all those who were afraid. Twenty-two thousand men went back home. This left him with 10,000. The Lord said this was still too many. He knew if they won the victory, they would feel they did it on their own. Therefore, the Lord had Gideon put the 10,000 to a test, and all that passed the test would be the ones He would use to defeat the enemy. After the test, only 300 men remained. With these men, God gave the Israelites the victory. (See Judges 6:1-8:32.)

After Gideon died, the Israelites went back to their old ways.

BONDAGE V

(After Gideon died, his son Abimelech took over the rule by force for 3 years.)

(See Judges 9:1-57.) God turned him and the people against each other.

Abimelech was killed when a woman dropped a millstone on his head.

Following this, the Israelites had several years of rest.

TOLA died after Judging Israel for 23 years.

JAIR died after judging Israel for 22 years.

The Israelites went back to their old ways. They became worse than ever.

(See Judges 10:6.)

BONDAGE VI

(Philistines and the Ammonites for 18 years)

The Israelites cried out to the Lord!

The Lord told them enough is enough and that they should get help from some other source. The Israelites admitted they were getting what they deserved, and asked God to do what He felt was best, but please deliver them.

DELIVERER - God felt sorry for the Israelites and sent JEPHTHAH to deliver them and judge them for 6 years.

Jephthah made a foolish vow and gave his daughter to the Lord for a living sacrifice. She remained unmarried all her life. (See Judges 11:37-40.)

Israel had rest for 25 years under 3 Judges.

Jephthah was followed by IBZAH for 7 years; then ABDON judged for 10 years and ELON for 8 years.

When Elon died, Israel went back to her old ways.

BONDAGE VII

(Back into the hands of the Philistines for 40 years)

At the end of the 40 years, the Lord took the first step in getting the Israelites out of their bondage.

DELIVERER - God raised up SAMSON, the Lord's muscleman.

Samson did not have cooperation from the Israelites as he worked hard to deliver them from their enemy. Samson ended up falling into sin, and losing out with God without even knowing what had happened. Samson was taken back into God's grace, and was able to slay 3000 of the Philistine leaders.

He had judged Israel for 20 years. See Judges 13:1-16:31.

After this, the Israelites were away from God until He raised up SAMUEL years later.

The book of Ruth took place at the time of the Judges.

The last judge was SAMUEL who acted as a transition between the judges and the kings that would follow the judges.

KEY 2 - Rebelling against God does not pay!

KEY 3 - God is merciful and is touched by your pain and suffering.

KEY 4 - The first thing you have to do if you are going to escape God's displeasure is turn from your sins!

KEY 5 - You can have a perfect environment and still fall into sin!

KEY 6 - A good family background does not automatically make you a good person.

KEY 7 - God will not leave sin unpunished regardless of who does the sinning.

KEY 8 - God will deliver you from sin and sinning if you ask Him to do so.

KEY 9 - A lot of your suffering may be brought on by your sinful ways.

KEY 10 - You can be a part of the problem or a part of the solution. Which is it?

b - Serving and worshiping any god except the true and living God is spiritual fornication.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

KEY 12 – God, as your Creator and Redeemer, has a right to treat you any way He pleases.

Chapter 5 Review Questions

1. What do you have to do to commit spiritual fornication?
2. How many times was Israel in bondage during the time of the Judges?
3. Who stirred up the surrounding nations against Israel? Why?
4. Why did God thin Gideon's army down to 300 men?
5. What did God tell the Israelites to do when they kept falling away and coming back when they were in trouble?
6. What caused Samson to fall into sin?
7. What does the last verse of Judges say? Does this fit your nation's attitude toward moral and spiritual values today?
8. Can you sin and get by with it?
9. What happened to Israel as they kept turning from God?
10. Will God forgive you if you ask Him to do so?
11. What shows God's willingness to help you when you are in trouble?
12. Are you trusting and obeying God right now?

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

For the LORD knows the way of the righteous: but the way of the ungodly shall perish (Psalm 1:6).

CHAPTER 6

THE KINGS AND THE KINGDOM

There is much to be learned through the history of the kings. As you study the material below you will see that human nature was the same then as it is today. Some of the kings did very well until the last years of their lives. A few kings started out bad and ended up good. Many of the kings never served the Lord. The Southern Kingdom did better than the Northern Kingdom.

Are you ready to go into the throne room of the kings of Israel?

KEY 1 - There are three kings whose reign covers the whole kingdom: **Saul** - 1 Samuel 9:1-2 Samuel 1:27 **David** - 2 Samuel; 1 Chronicles 10- 29 **Solomon** - 1 Kings 1-11; 2 Chronicles 1-9.

KEY 2 - The Israelite Kingdom was divided into the Northern Kingdom and the Southern Kingdom because of Solomon's sin against God.

KEY 3 - The center of worship was transferred from Shiloh to Jerusalem in David's reign.

KEY 4 - David was the best of all the kings.

KEY 5 - David acted as a model for the other kings to follow.

KEY 6 - The kingdom was to be ruled by God through the kings.

KEY 7 - Jeroboam I set the rebellious pace for the Northern Kingdom.

KEY 8 - None of the kings of the Northern Kingdom served God.

KEY 9 - The Northern Kingdom went into exile before the Southern Kingdom.

KEY 10 - Baal worship was practiced by some of the Southern Kingdom kings.

KEY 11 - The Southern Kingdom kings were descendants of David.

KEY 12 - None of the Northern Kingdom kings were descendants of David.

KEY 13 - 1 & 2 Samuel, 1 & 2 Kings, and 1 & 2 Chronicles give you valuable information about the kings.

KEY 14 - Esther tells you about the kingdom in exile.

KEY 15 - Ezra and Nehemiah tells you about the kingdom being restored.

KEY 16 - The Northern Kingdom was never brought back from exile.

KEY 17 - The temple was built starting the 4th year of Solomon's reign and finished 7 years later.

KEY 18 - The temple was destroyed by Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, in Zedekiah's reign 436 years after it was built.

KEY 19 - The rebuilding of the temple was started in the 1st year of Cyrus, king of Persia and finished in the 6th year of Darius, king of Persia (from about 559 BC to 519 BC).

KEY 20 - The exile and return of the Jews were in three stages.

KEY 21 - The exile of the Southern Kingdom lasted 70 years as foretold by Jeremiah.

KEY 22 - Most of the kings in both kingdoms did not serve God.

KEY 23 - God stayed with His people during the exile.

KEY 24 - Sin was punished during the reign of the kings.

KEY 25 - The Northern and Southern Kingdoms were to follow the same laws as the original kingdom.

KEY 26 - The Southern Kingdom was composed of the tribes of Judah and Benjamin.

KEY 27 - The Northern Kingdom was composed of the other 10 tribes.

KEY 28 - The Northern Kingdom went into exile during Hezekiah's reign.

KEY 29 - The Southern Kingdom lasted longer than the Northern one because they had spiritual renewals from time to time.

KEY 30 - The people of the Bible are regular people with the same kind of problems and relationships you have today.

KEY 31 - Except for a few translation errors there are no contradictions in the history of the kings. (See below for a **list of apparent contradictions in the Bible, and how to resolve them.**)

KEY 32 - Israel will be given an eternal earthly kingdom—with their headquarters in Jerusalem—when Jesus returns.

Questionable Scriptures Explained

All contradictions in the Bible can be explained to the satisfaction of any honest inquirer. People having hidden agendas major on the contradictions of the Bible.

Bible contradictions can be artificially produced by taking verses out of context. You can make the Bible say about anything if you take a verse here and one there and put them together as though they belong together. Many of the so-called

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

“contradictions” of the Bible are produced this way.

Some contradictions in the Bible are copy errors. See 2 Chronicles 22:2. This is a copy error. The correct date is found in 2 Kings 8:26. The problem is Hebrew letters are used for numbers. Some of these letters look very much alike.

Some apparent contradictions are names. People are called by different names. This is not a contradiction. People are named according to their character. In other words, their names indicate their character. Examples are Abram to Abraham; Jacob to Israel.

Baasha could not have gone against Asa in Asa’s 36th year because Baasha would have been dead by this time. (See 1 Kings 15:16, 17; 2 Chronicles 16:1.) I am suggesting this is either a letter to number copy error explained in paragraph 3 above or a copyist error caused by fatigue.

2 Samuel 24 and 1 Chronicles 21 have enough differences that these could very well have been two different occasions. In one place, Satan tempts David and in the other, God is testing David. David messed up on both occasions and had to go through the process of intercession again. This is typical of many of us humans. We do not learn our lesson the first time and end up repeating the same sin.

When you think about the number of translations and hand-copyings the Bible has gone through, you should be amazed that there are so few “errors” in it. Anyone who gets “bent out of shape” because of the few so-called contradictions of the Bible is probably beyond help.

The Bible can be trusted to be reliable for every area of your life. It contains absolute truths about science and relational themes. You would do well to follow its warnings, stand on its promises, and abide by its commands. You need the Bible to help you chart a clear course for your thoughts, words and deeds on this earth. Furthermore, your Bible is a map that will show you the way to your heavenly home. The Bible is the only book where you can find out how to have a right relationship with your God and your fellowman. Do not let anyone make you think the Bible is not reliable because of the few so-called “contradictions” that are in it. The Bible is still the Word of God for the whole human race.

APPLICATION OF THIS TRUTH

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

1. You should learn not to practice the sins of these people.
2. You should follow the examples of the good kings.
3. If you do not serve God, you will be brought into bondage by someone else.
4. Serving God is better for you than serving someone else.
5. God requires that you stay true to Him to the end. (See Psalms 78 and 106.)
6. When you think of all the years involved in translating and copying the Bible, the few “errors” you find in the Bible are amazing. If your city newspaper went through the same process, you would not be able to recognize the original from the copy. Surely, God has been with those who have brought the Bible down to you the same as it was written thousands of years ago.
7. Anyone who gets “bent out of shape” by the few “errors” found in the Bible is probably beyond help.

Chapter 6 Study Questions

Answers to these questions are found in 1 Samuel to Esther in your Bible!

1. What can you learn from the sins of the kings?
2. What can you learn from the history of the kings?
3. How many good kings were there?
4. Who was the worst king in the Northern Kingdom?
5. Who was the worst king in the Southern Kingdom?
6. What made these kings so bad?
7. Who was the best king in the whole kingdom?
8. How do you account for the errors in the history of the kings? See “Questionable Scriptures Explained” above for the answer to this question.
9. How many phases were there to the exile and return of the Jews?
10. Where is the Northern Kingdom today?
11. Did the Northern Kingdom return to the Holy Land?
12. Where will the Jewish people be when Jesus sets up His kingdom?
13. Fill in the Scriptures that apply to these keys.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Bless the LORD, O my soul, and forget not all His benefits: Who forgives all your iniquities; Who heals all you diseases; Who redeems you life from destruction; Who crowns you with lovingkindness and tender mercies; Who satisfies you mouth with good things; so that you youth is renewed like the eagle's (Psalm 103:2-5).

CHAPTER 7

THE WRITINGS OF JOB THROUGH SONG OF SOLOMON

This chapter covers the books of Job, Psalms, Proverbs, Ecclesiastes and Song of Solomon. The keys of this area of the Bible can be used to unlock many precepts of the Christian life-style. In this part of your Bible, you will find information about God and his people. It gives the don'ts as well as the dos in living a good productive life. These are the wisdom books of the Bible.

Are you ready to let God shepherd you for the rest of your life?
Come with me into the wonderful treasure house of God's love!

JOB

Main Characters:

God (Chapters 1:6-12; 2:1-6; 38; 39; 40:1-2, 6-24; 41; 42:7-17)

Job (Chapters 1:1-5; 3; 6; 7; 10; 12-14; 16; 17; 19; 21; 23; 24:26-31; 40:3-5; 42:1-6, 10-17)

Eliphaz, the Temanite (Chapters 4, 5, 15, 22)

Bildad, the Shuhite (Chapters 8, 15, 25)

Zophar, the Naamathite (Chapters 11, 20)

Elihu, the son of Barachel, the Buzite of the family of Ram (Chapters 32-37)

Satan (Chapters 1:6-2:10)

KEY 1 - The book of Job is the oldest book in the Bible. It took place in Abraham's day.

KEY 2 - The flood is told about in Job 22:16.

KEY 3 - God sees things from a different perspective than you do.

KEY 4 - God does everything for your good and His glory.

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

- KEY 5** - God does allow the Devil to assault His people.
- KEY 6** - God limits what the Devil can do to His children.
- KEY 7** - God always does what is right.
- KEY 8** - You do not always have the full picture of what is happening to you.
- KEY 9** - The righteous suffer as well as the wicked.
- KEY 10** - The wicked receive blessings from God as well as the righteous.
- KEY 11** - Your faith needs to be centered on God's goodness rather than on your perspective of how things should be.
- KEY 12** - God's people always turn out all right in the end.
- KEY 13** - People of the world will condemn you as a bad person if things go wrong for you, because they feel, "good people" should not go through great suffering.
- KEY 14** - God is your Judge and it is your duty as well as your wonderful privilege to serve Him when things are going good or not so good.

THE PSALMS:

- KEY 1** - cover every area of life;
- KEY 2** - tell about real people with real struggles;
- KEY 3** - are set to music;
- KEY 4** - show how God deals with His people;
- KEY 5** - show what God is like;
- KEY 6** - show you how to live a good life;
- KEY 7** - show how to honor God;
- KEY 8** - are for Christians as well as Jews.
- KEY 9** - There are some good books explaining the Psalms.
- KEY 10** - Some Psalms give history of God's dealing with the Jews.
- KEY 11** - There are Psalms that tell about Jesus.
- KEY 12** - There are many wonderful promises in the Psalms.

BOOK OF PROVERBS:

- KEY 1** - shows the difference between saints and sinners;
- KEY 2** - give you guidelines for true wisdom;
- KEY 3** - are easy to memorize;
- KEY 4** - are easy to apply to life situations;

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

- KEY 5** - use many figures of speech;
- KEY 6** - are worthy to be applied to your daily life;
- KEY 7** - will keep you out of much trouble if you follow their advice;
- KEY 8** - can help you develop a sound mind;
- KEY 9** - can help you enjoy true success if you apply them to all your personal relationships;
- KEY 10** - can help you live a godly life;
- KEY 11** - can be read in a month. Read a chapter a day to keep the proverbs fresh in your mind and heart.
- KEY 12** - Applying the proverbs to every area of your life can help you live with direction and purpose.

ECCLESIASTES:

- KEY 1** - shows the folly of living a materialistic life-style;
- KEY 2** - shows you how not to order your life;
- KEY 3** - shows the folly of just living for the moment with no plans;
- KEY 4** - talks about time in Chapter 3;
- KEY 5** - shows how Solomon searched out things through his wisdom;
- KEY 6** - shows what is really important in life;
- KEY 7** - encourages you to use your time doing God's will;
- KEY 8** - encourages the youth to remember God;
- KEY 9** - encourages you to enjoy life in God's service;
- KEY 10** - is considered one of the wisdom books of the Bible.

SONG OF SOLOMON:

- KEY 1** - tells about love between marriage partners;
- KEY 2** - is a type of love between Christ and His Church;
- KEY 3** - shows the progression of true love;
- KEY 4** - was used in wedding ceremonies in Bible times;
- KEY 5** - is one of the wisdom books of the Bible.

APPLICATION OF THIS TRUTH

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

1. Read Job when you feel everything is going wrong.
2. Go to the Psalms when you need encouragement. They have answers for every problem you encounter in life.
3. Go to this area of your Bible often. Commit as much of it as you can to memory. It is a gold mine of useful material for you to use! Furthermore, this is where you need to go when you want to find out what God is like and what you are to do to please Him. This is where you need to go when you want to know how to conduct yourself in the everyday affairs of life. It will give you sound advice and good principles to live by.

Chapter 7 Study Questions

1. Who was Job?
2. What was God doing while Job was suffering pain and loss?
3. What was Satan doing to trip up Job?
4. Did Job curse God to His face?
5. How did Job's comforters comfort him?
6. Why did Job's comforters think he was out of step with God?
7. What can you learn from the Book of Job regarding Science?
8. How do you know the Book of Job is the oldest one in the Bible?
9. What should you do when everything looks black?
10. Can you test the scientific statements of The Book of Job?
11. Do the Psalms have anything that is useful to your generation? If so, what?
12. What do the Psalms tell you about God?
13. What do the Psalms tell you about Jesus?
14. According to the Psalms, does it pay to serve God? How?
15. Are the people in Psalms "real people with real problems?"
16. How are the Proverbs used in your daily life?
17. Why should you commit Bible verses to memory?
18. How has this area of the Bible helped you cope with life?
19. What does Ecclesiastes tell you about materialistic living?
20. What does the Song of Solomon teach you about human romance?
21. What does it tell you about love between Christ and His Church?
22. What is your favorite Psalm?
23. Find and apply the appropriate Scriptures to each of these keys by studying

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

the books under review.

Scriptures on Wisdom and Understanding

“The fear of the LORD is the instruction of wisdom; and before honor is humility” (Proverbs 15:33).

The following Scriptures on wisdom and knowledge will help you understand the Bible, thus God’s view of this subject. These will help you understand the importance of conforming to God’s standards in doing good science. Good science will bring honor and glory to God and help you do good to others as well. Wisdom is found by following the leading of the Holy Spirit and knowledge is gained by respecting God at all times. Good science is covered later.

Are you ready to accept God’s wisdom and understanding?

“The mouth of the righteous speaks wisdom, and his tongue talks of judgment” (Psalms 37:30).

“My mouth shall speak of wisdom; and the meditation of my heart shall be of understanding” (Psalms 49:3).

“Behold, you desire truth in the inward parts: and in the hidden part you shall make me to know wisdom” (Psalms 51:6).

“So teach us to number our days, that we may apply our hearts unto wisdom” (Psalms 90:12).

“O LORD, how manifold are you works! in wisdom have you made them all: the earth is full of you riches” (Psalms 104:24).

“To bind his princes at his pleasure; and teach his senators wisdom” (Psalms 105:22).

“The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom: a good understanding have all they that do His commandments: His praise endures for ever” (Psalms 111:10).

“To Him that by wisdom made the heavens: for His mercy endures for ever” (Psalms 136:5).

“To know wisdom and instruction; to perceive the words of understanding; To receive the instruction of wisdom, justice, and judgment, and equity; To give subtilty (prudence) to the simple, to the young man knowledge and discretion”

(Proverbs 1:2-4).

“The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction” (Proverbs 1:7).

“My son, if you will receive my words, and hide my commandments with you; So that you incline your ear unto wisdom, and apply your heart to understanding; Yea (yes), if you cry after knowledge, and lift up you voice for understanding; If you seek her as silver, and search for her as for hid treasures; Then shall you understand the fear of the LORD, and find the knowledge of God. For the LORD gives wisdom: out of his mouth comes knowledge and understanding. He lay up sound wisdom for the righteous: He is a buckler (shield) to them that walk uprightly” (Proverbs 2:1-7).

“When wisdom enters into your heart, and knowledge is pleasant unto you soul; Discretion shall preserve you, understanding shall keep you: To deliver you from the way of the evil man, from the man that speaks froward things; Who leave the paths of uprightness, to walk in the ways of darkness; Who rejoice to do evil, and delight in the frowardness of the wicked; Whose ways are crooked, and they froward in their paths: To deliver you from the strange woman, even from the stranger which flatters with her words; Which forsakes the guide of her youth, and forgets the covenant of her God. For her house inclines unto death, and her paths unto the dead” (Proverbs 2:10-18).

“Happy is the man that finds wisdom, and the man that gets understanding” (Proverbs 3:13).

“The LORD by wisdom has founded the earth; by understanding has He established the heavens. By His knowledge the depths are broken up, and the clouds drop down the dew. My son, let not them depart from your eyes: keep sound wisdom and discretion: So shall they be life unto you soul, and grace to you neck” (Proverbs 3:19-22).

“Get wisdom, get understanding: forget it not; neither decline from the words of my mouth. Forsake her not, and she shall preserve you: love her, and she shall keep you. Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all you getting get understanding. Exalt her, and she shall promote you: she shall bring you to honor, when you do embrace her. She shall give to your head an ornament of grace: a crown of glory shall she deliver to you. Hear, O my son, and receive my sayings; and the years of you life shall be many. I have taught you in the way of wisdom; I have led you in right paths” (Proverbs 4:5-11).

“My son, attend unto my wisdom, and bow your ear to my understanding: That

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

you may regard discretion, and that you lips may keep knowledge” (Proverbs 5:1, 2).

“Say unto wisdom, you are my sister; and call understanding you kinswoman: That they may keep you from the strange woman, from the stranger which flatters with her words” (Proverbs 7:4, 5).

“does not wisdom cry? and understanding put forth her voice?” (Proverbs 8:1).

“O you simple, understand wisdom: and, you fools, be you of an understanding heart” (Proverbs 8:5).

“For wisdom is better than rubies; and all the things that may be desired are not to be compared to it. I wisdom dwell with prudence, and find out knowledge of witty inventions. The fear of the LORD is to hate evil: pride, and arrogancy, and the evil way, and the froward mouth, do I hate. Counsel is mine, and sound wisdom: I am understanding; I have strength” (Proverbs 8:11-14).

“The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the holy is understanding” (Proverbs 9:10).

“In the lips of him that has understanding wisdom is found: but a rod is for the back of him that is void of understanding. Wise men lay up knowledge: but the mouth of the foolish is near destruction” (Proverbs 10:13, 14).

“The lips of the righteous feed many: but fools die for want of wisdom” (Proverbs 10:21).

“It is as sport to a fool to do mischief: but a man of understanding has wisdom” (Proverbs 10:23).

“The mouth of the just brings forth wisdom: but the froward tongue shall be cut out (destroyed)” (Proverbs 10:31).

“When pride comes, then comes shame: but with the lowly is wisdom” (Proverbs 11:2).

“He that is void of wisdom despises his neighbor: but a man of understanding holds his peace” (Proverbs 11:12).

“A man shall be commended according to his wisdom: but he that is of a perverse heart shall be despised” (Proverbs 12:8).

“Only by pride comes contention: but with the well advised is wisdom” (Proverbs 13:10).

“A scorner seeks wisdom, and finds it not: but knowledge is easy unto him that understands” (Proverbs 14:6).

“The wisdom of the prudent is to understand his way: but the folly of fools is deceit” (Proverbs 14:8).

“Wisdom rests in the heart of him that has understanding: but that which is in the midst of fools is made known” (Proverbs 14:33).

“Folly is joy to him that is destitute of wisdom: but a man of understanding walks uprightly” (Proverbs 15:21).

“The fear of the LORD is the instruction of wisdom; and before honor is humility” (Proverbs 15:33).

“How much better is it to get wisdom than gold! and to get understanding rather to be chosen than silver!” (Proverbs 16:16).

“Wherefore is there a price in the hand of a fool to get wisdom, seeing he has no heart to it?” (Proverbs 17:16).

“Through desire a man, having separated himself, seeks and intermeddles (quarrels) with all wisdom” (Proverbs 18:1).

“The words of a man’s mouth are as deep waters, and the wellspring of wisdom as a flowing brook” (Proverbs 18:4).

“He that gets wisdom loves his own soul: he that keeps understanding shall find good” (Proverbs 19:8).

“There is no wisdom nor understanding nor counsel against the LORD” (Proverbs 21:30).

“Labor not to be rich: cease from your own wisdom” (Proverbs 23:4).

“Speak not in the ears of a fool: for he will despise the wisdom of your words” (Proverbs 23:9).

“Buy the truth, and sell it not; also wisdom, and instruction, and understanding” (Proverbs 23:23).

“Through wisdom is an house built; and by understanding it is established: And by knowledge shall the chambers be filled with all precious and pleasant riches” (Proverbs 24:3, 4).

“Wisdom is too high for a fool: he opens not his mouth in the gate” (Proverbs 24:7).

“So shall the knowledge of wisdom be unto you soul: when you have found it, then there shall be a reward, and your expectation shall not be cut off” (Proverbs 24:14).

“Whoso loves wisdom rejoices his father: but he that keeps company with harlots spends his substance” (Proverbs 29:3).

“The rod and reproof give wisdom: but a child left to himself brings his mother to shame” (Proverbs 29:15).

“I neither learned wisdom, nor have the knowledge of the holy” (Proverbs 30:3).

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

“She opens her mouth with wisdom; and in her tongue is the law of kindness” (Proverbs 31:26).

“For God gives to a man that is good in His sight wisdom, and knowledge, and joy: but to the sinner He gives travail, to gather and to heap up, that He may give to him that is good before God. This also is vanity and vexation of spirit” (Ecclesiastes 2:26).

“Wisdom strengthens the wise more than ten mighty men which are in the city” (Ecclesiastes 7:19).

“Who is as the wise man? and who knows the interpretation of a thing? a man’s wisdom makes his face to shine, and the boldness of his face shall be changed” (Ecclesiastes 8:1).

“Whatsoever your hand finds to do, do it with your might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither you go” (Ecclesiastes 9:10).

“Wisdom is better than weapons of war: but one sinner destroys much good” (Ecclesiastes 9:18).

“Dead flies cause the ointment of the apothecary to send forth a stinking savor: so does a little folly him that is in reputation for wisdom and honor” (Ecclesiastes 10:1).

“Yea (yes) also, when he that is a fool walks by the way, his wisdom fails him, and he says to every one that he is a fool” (Ecclesiastes 10:3).

“If the iron be blunt, and he do not whet the edge, then must he put to more strength: but wisdom is profitable to direct” (Ecclesiastes 10:10).

“And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots: And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon Him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD; And shall make Him of quick understanding in the fear of the LORD: and He shall not judge after the sight of His eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of His ears: But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and He shall smite the earth: with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips shall He slay the wicked” (Isaiah 11:1-4).

“Therefore, behold, I will proceed to do a marvelous work among this people, even a marvelous work and a wonder: for the wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid” (Isaiah 29:14).

“And wisdom and knowledge shall be the stability of your times, and strength of

salvation: the fear of the LORD is his treasure” (Isaiah 33:6).

“For you have trusted in you wickedness: you have said, None sees me. you wisdom and you knowledge, it has perverted you; and you have said in your heart, I am, and none else beside me” (Isaiah 47:10).

“The wise men are ashamed, they are dismayed and taken: lo, they have rejected the word of the LORD; and what wisdom is in them?” (Jeremiah 8:9).

“Thus says the LORD, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches: But let him that glories glory in this, that he understands and knows me, that I am the LORD which exercise lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, says the LORD” (Jeremiah 9:23, 24).

“He has made the earth by His power, He has established the world by His wisdom, and has stretched out the heavens by His discretion” (Jeremiah 10:12).

“He has made the earth by His power, He has established the world by His wisdom, and has stretched out the heaven by His understanding” (Jeremiah 51:15).

“your heart was lifted up because of you beauty, you have corrupted you wisdom by reason of you brightness: I will cast you to the ground, I will lay you before kings, that they may behold you” (Ezekiel 28:17).

“As for these four children, God gave them knowledge and skill in all learning and wisdom: and Daniel had understanding in all visions and dreams” (Daniel 1:17).

“And in all matters of wisdom and understanding, that the king inquired of them, he found them ten times better than all the magicians and astrologers that were in all his realm” (Daniel 1:20).

“The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a winebibber (drunkard), a friend of publicans and sinners. But wisdom is justified of her children” (Matthew 11:19).

“The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here” (Matthew 12:42).

“And when the sabbath day was come, He began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him were astonished, saying, From whence has this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by His hands?” (Mark 6:2).

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

“And He shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord” (Luke 1:17).

“And the Child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon Him” (Luke 2:40).

“And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and man” (Luke 2:52).

“Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and some of them they shall slay and persecute: That the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; From the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation” (Luke 11:49-51).

“For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist” (Luke 21:15).

“And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch: Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them” (Acts 6:5, 6).

“And they were not able to resist the wisdom and the spirit by which He spoke” (Acts 6:10).

“And delivered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favor and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt; and he made him governor over Egypt and all his house” (Acts 7:10).

“And Moses was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in deeds” (Acts 7:22).

“O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are His judgments, and His ways past finding out!” (Romans 11:33).

“For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect” (1 Corinthians 1:17).

“For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? has not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it

pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling-block, and unto the Greeks foolishness; But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God” (1 Corinthians 1:19-24).

“But of Him are you in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption: That, according as it is written, He that glories, let him glory in the Lord” (1 Corinthians 1:30, 31).

“And I, brethren (brothers), when I came to you, came not with excellency (superiority) of speech or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God” (1 Corinthians 2:1).

“And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man’s wisdom, but in demonstration of the spirit and of power: That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God. Howbeit we speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nothing: But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory: Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory” (1 Corinthians 2:4-8).

“Which things also we speak, not in the words which man’s wisdom teaches, but which the Holy Spirit teaches; comparing spiritual things with spiritual” (1 Corinthians 2:13).

“For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He takes the wise in their own craftiness” (1 Corinthians 3:19).

“For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues (languages); to another the interpretation of tongues (languages): But all these works that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally (individuality) as He will” (1 Corinthians 12:8-11).

“For our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have had our conversation (conduct) in the world, and more abundantly to you-ward” (2 Corinthians 1:12).

“In whom we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins,

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

according to the riches of His grace; Wherein He has abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; Having made known unto us the mystery of His will, according to His good pleasure which He has purposed in Himself: That in the dispensation of the fullness of times He might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in Him: In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of Him who works all things after the counsel of His own will: That we should be to the praise of His glory, who first trusted in Christ” (Ephesians 1:7-12).

“Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints, Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers; That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him: The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that you may know what is the hope of His calling, and what the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints, And what is the exceeding greatness of His power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of His mighty power, Which He wrought in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead, and set Him at His own right hand in the heavenly places, Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: And has put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is His body, the fullness of Him that fills all in all” (Ephesians 1:17-23).

“Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ; And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world has been hid in God, Who created all things by Jesus Christ: To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God, According to the eternal purpose which He purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of Him” (Ephesians 3:8-12).

“For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that you might be filled with the knowledge of His will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding” (Colossians 1:9).

“Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus” (Colossians 1:28).

“In Whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge” (Colossians 2:3).

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

“Which things have indeed a show of wisdom in will worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body; not in any honor to the satisfying of the flesh” (Colossians 2:23).

“Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord” (Colossians 3:16).

“Walk in wisdom toward them that are without, redeeming the time” (Colossians 4:5).

“If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that gives to all men liberally, and upbraids not; and it shall be given him” (James 1:5).

“Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him show out of a good conversation (conduct) his works with meekness of wisdom” (James 3:13).

“But if you have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. This wisdom descends not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish” (James 3:14, 15).

“But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be intreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy” (James 3:17).

“And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him has written unto you; As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction” (2 Peter 3:15, 16).

“Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, honor, and glory, and blessing” (Revelation 5:12).

“Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honor, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen” (Revelation 7:12).

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See you do it not: I am you fellow-servant, and of you brethren (brothers) that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy (Revelation 19:10).

CHAPTER 8

THE PROPHETS AND THEIR PROPHECIES

The Bible was written by God's holy men. The Bible revelation closes with the new testament Book of Revelation. It is your task to apply God's works of revelation and redemption to your daily life. You cannot modify God's plan for your life. You must decide whether you are going to follow God's word or go some other way to your own hurt.

Are you ready to go with me into the hidden things of God?

KEY 1 - There are four (4) major prophets: Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel and Daniel.

KEY 2 - There are twelve (12) minor prophets: Hosea, Joel, Amos, Obadiah, Jonah, Micah, Nahum, Habakkuk, Zephaniah, Haggai, Zechariah and Malachi.

KEY 3 - You do not have all the holy prophets' writings in your Bible.

KEY 4 - There were women prophetesses in the Old and New Testament times.

KEY 5 - All the prophets were expected to give God's message to the people as He gave it to them.

KEY 6 - Any prophet who did not get his message from God was a false prophet.

KEY 7 - The Bible talks about many false prophets.

KEY 8 - There were two tests for a prophet: (1) the predictions must come to pass, (2) the message must lead people to God and His ways. "But the prophet, which shall presume to speak a word in My name, which I have not commanded him to speak, or that shall speak in the name of other gods, even that prophet shall die. And if you say in your heart, How shall we know the word which the LORD has not spoken? When a prophet speaks in the name of the LORD, if the thing follow not, nor come to pass, that is the thing which the LORD has not spoken, but the prophet has spoken it presumptuously (arrogantly): you shall not be afraid of him" (Deuteronomy 18:20-22).

KEY 9 - All true prophets were "holy men of God" who "were moved" by God's

Holy Spirit.

KEY 10 - No prophecy was of a private interpretation. “We have also a more sure word of prophecy; where unto you do well that you take heed, as unto a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit” (2 Peter 1:19-21).

KEY 11 - Much of the prophets’ writings are direct quotes of God. (Time and time again you find expressions like: “thus says the LORD”; “the word of the LORD came unto me,” etc.)

KEY 12 - The Book of Revelation is the only book of prophecy in the New Testament.

KEY 13 - The prophecies in the Old Testament are related to Israel or the coming Messiah as the absolute Redeemer of all humanity for time and eternity.

KEY 14 - The prophecies in the New Testament are related to the Church and the coming of Jesus to reign as King of kings.

KEY 15 - All the prophecies in your Bible have been, or are going to be fulfilled exactly as stated.

KEY 16 - The prophecies in the Bible reveal God’s knowledge of all things in the future, as well as past and present.

KEY 17 - When a figure of speech is used in the prophetic books, it is obvious, and an interpretation is usually provided in the context.

KEY 18 - The testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy. (See Revelation 19:10.)

KEY 19 - The main theme of prophecy is the restoration of all things through Jesus Christ.

KEY 20 - The whole Bible was given to you through the prophets of God.

KEY 21 - All Scripture is to be used for your profit. “All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works” (2 Timothy 3:16, 17).

KEY 22 - It is serious business to add to or take away from God’s Word. (See Revelation 22:18, 19.)

KEY 23 - You are instructed to study God’s Word. (See 2 Timothy 2:15.)

KEY 24 - You are instructed to preach God’s Word. (See 2 Timothy 4:1-5.)

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

APPLICATION OF THIS TRUTH

1. The Bible is not a man-made book.
 2. The Bible is God's message to the whole human race.
 3. The Bible is relevant for all generations and all peoples.
 4. The Bible is completely reliable.
- Hide its words in your heart, rest securely on its promises and proclaim its message to the ends of the earth.

Chapter 8 Study Questions

The answers to these study questions are found from Isaiah to Malachi in the Old Testament and in Revelation in the New Testament in your Bible!

1. How many prophetic books are there in the Bible?
2. Find some of the prophets who did not have prophetic books in the Bible.
3. List some of the women prophetesses of the Bible.
4. How can you know whether a prophet is God's prophet?
5. According to 2 Peter 1:19-21, what makes the prophecies sure?
6. According to Deuteronomy 4:2, are you allowed to change God's Word to fit your present understanding of things?
7. What is the difference between the prophecies in the Old and New Testaments?
8. What do the prophecies tell you about God's knowledge?
9. According to 2 Timothy 2:15 and 4:1-5, what are you instructed to do with God's Word.
10. How was the Bible given to you?
11. What does Revelation 19:10 tell you about prophecy?
12. According to 2 Timothy 3:16, 17, what is the purpose of God's Word?
13. Name some fulfilled and unfulfilled prophecies. See below to help you answer this question.
14. What is meant by "plenary inspiration" of the Scriptures?

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Prophecies Concerning the Messiah

Jewish Accepted Messianic Scriptures

“The word that Isaiah the son of Amoz saw concerning Judah and Jerusalem. And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the LORD’S house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it. And many people shall go and say, Come you, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; and He will teach us of His ways, and we will walk in His paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. And He shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more. O house of Jacob, come you, and let us walk in the light of the LORD.

“Therefore you have forsaken you people the house of Jacob, because they be replenished from the east, and are soothsayers like the Philistines, and they please themselves in the children of strangers. Their land also is full of silver and gold, neither is there any end of their treasures; their land is also full of horses, neither is there any end of their chariots: Their land also is full of idols; they worship the work of their own hands, that which their own fingers have made: And the mean man (bows down, and the great man humbles himself: therefore forgive them not.

“Enter into the rock, and hide you in the dust, for fear of the LORD, and for the glory of His majesty. The lofty looks of man shall be humbled, and the haughtiness of men shall be bowed down, and the LORD alone shall be exalted in that day. For the day of the LORD of hosts shall be upon every one that is proud and lofty, and upon every one that is lifted up; and he shall be brought low: And upon all the cedars of Lebanon, that are high and lifted up, and upon all the oaks of Bashan, And upon all the high mountains, and upon all the hills that are lifted up, And upon every high tower, and upon every fenced wall, And upon all the ships of Tarshish, and upon all pleasant pictures. And the loftiness of man shall be bowed down, and the haughtiness of men shall be made low: and the LORD alone shall be exalted in that day. And the idols He shall utterly abolish. And they shall go into the holes of the rocks, and into the caves of the earth, for fear of the LORD, and for the glory of His majesty, when He arises to shake terribly the earth. In that day a man shall cast his idols of silver, and his idols of gold, which they made each one for himself to worship, to the moles and to the bats; To go

into the clefts of the rocks, and into the tops of the ragged rocks, for fear of the LORD, and for the glory of His majesty, when He arises to shake terribly the earth. Cease you from man, whose breath is in his nostrils: for wherein is he to be accounted of?" (**Isaiah 2**).

“And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots: And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon Him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD; And shall make Him of quick understanding in the fear of the LORD: and He shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears: But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and He shall smite the earth: with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall He slay the wicked. And righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins. The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.

“And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the LORD shall set his hand again the second time to recover the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Cush, and from Elam, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the islands of the sea. And He shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth. The envy also of Ephraim shall depart, and the adversaries of Judah shall be cut off: Ephraim shall not envy Judah, and Judah shall not vex Ephraim. But they shall fly upon the shoulders of the Philistines toward the west; they shall spoil them of the east together: they shall lay their hand upon Edom and Moab; and the children of Ammon shall obey them. And the LORD shall utterly destroy the tongue of the Egyptian sea; and with his mighty wind shall He shake his hand over the river, and shall smite it in the seven streams, and make men go over dryshod. And there shall be an highway

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

for the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria; like as it was to Israel in the day that he came up out of the land of Egypt” **(Isaiah 11)**.

“Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delights; I have put my spirit upon Him: He shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not cry, nor lift up, nor cause his voice to be heard in the street. A bruised reed shall He not break, and the smoking flax shall He not quench: He shall bring forth judgment unto truth. He shall not fail nor be discouraged, till He have set judgment in the earth: and the isles shall wait for his law.

“Thus says God the LORD, He that created the heavens, and stretched them out; He that spread forth the earth, and that which comes out of it; He that gives breath unto the people upon it, and spirit to them that walk therein: I the LORD have called you in righteousness, and will hold your hand, and will keep you, and give you for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles; To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house. I am the LORD: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images. Behold, the former things are come to pass, and new things do I declare: before they spring forth I tell you of them. Sing unto the LORD a new song, and his praise from the end of the earth, you that go down to the sea, and all that is therein; the isles, and the inhabitants thereof. Let the wilderness and the cities thereof lift up their voice, the villages that Kedar does inhabit: let the inhabitants of the rock sing, let them shout from the top of the mountains. Let them give glory unto the LORD, and declare his praise in the islands. The LORD shall go forth as a mighty man, He shall stir up jealousy like a man of war: He shall cry, yea (yes), roar; He shall prevail against his enemies. I have long time holden my peace; I have been still, and refrained myself: now will I cry like a travailing woman; I will destroy and devour at once. I will make waste mountains and hills, and dry up all their herbs; and I will make the rivers islands, and I will dry up the pools. And I will bring the blind by a way that they knew not; I will lead them in paths that they have not known: I will make darkness light before them, and crooked things straight. These things will I do unto them, and not forsake them.

“They shall be turned back, they shall be greatly ashamed, that trust in graven images, that say to the molten images, you are our gods. Hear, you deaf; and look, you blind, that you may see. Who is blind, but my servant? or deaf, as my messenger that I sent? who is blind as he that is perfect, and blind as the LORD’S servant? Seeing many things, but you observe not; opening the ears, but he hears

not. The LORD is well pleased for his righteousness' sake; He will magnify the law, and make it honorable. But this is a people robbed and spoiled; they are all of them snared in holes, and they are hid in prison houses: they are for a prey, and none delivers; for a spoil, and none says, Restore. Who among you will give ear to this? who will hearken and hear for the time to come? Who gave Jacob for a spoil, and Israel to the robbers? did not the LORD, He against whom we have sinned? for they would not walk in his ways, neither were they obedient unto his law. Therefore He has poured upon him the fury of his anger, and the strength of battle: and it has set him on fire round about, yet he knew not; and it burned him, yet he laid it not to heart" (**Isaiah 42**).

"And the Redeemer shall come to Zion, and unto them that turn from transgression in Jacob, says the LORD" (Isaiah 59:20).

"Woe be unto the pastors that destroy and scatter the sheep of My pasture! says the LORD. Therefore thus says the LORD God of Israel against the pastors that feed My people; you have scattered My flock, and driven them away, and have not visited them: behold, I will visit upon you the evil of your doings, says the LORD. And I will gather the remnant of My flock out of all countries whither I have driven them, and will bring them again to their folds; and they shall be fruitful and increase. And I will set up shepherds over them which shall feed them: and they shall fear no more, nor be dismayed, neither shall they be lacking, says the LORD.

"Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth. In His days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is His name whereby He shall be called, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS. Therefore, behold, the days come, says the LORD, that they shall no more say, The LORD lives, which brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt; But, The LORD lives, which brought up and which led the seed of the house of Israel out of the north country, and from all countries whither I had driven them; and they shall dwell in their own land.

"Mine heart within me is broken because of the prophets; all my bones shake; I am like a drunken man, and like a man whom wine has overcome, because of the LORD, and because of the words of His holiness. For the land is full of adulterers; for because of swearing the land mourns; the pleasant places of the wilderness are dried up, and their course is evil, and their force is not right. For both prophet and priest are profane; yea (yes), in My house have I found their

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

wickedness, says the LORD. Wherefore their way shall be unto them as slippery ways in the darkness: they shall be driven on, and fall therein: for I will bring evil upon them, even the year of their visitation, says the LORD. And I have seen folly in the prophets of Samaria; they prophesied in Baal, and caused My people Israel to err. I have seen also in the prophets of Jerusalem an horrible thing: they commit adultery, and walk in lies: they strengthen also the hands of evildoers, that none does return from his wickedness; they are all of them unto me as Sodom, and the inhabitants thereof as Gomorrah. Therefore thus says the LORD of hosts concerning the prophets; Behold, I will feed them with wormwood, and make them drink the water of gall: for from the prophets of Jerusalem is profaneness gone forth into all the land. Thus says the LORD of hosts, Hearken not unto the words of the prophets that prophesy unto you: they make you vain: they speak a vision of their own heart, and not out of the mouth of the LORD. They say still unto them that despise me, The LORD has said, you shall have peace; and they say unto every one that walks after the imagination of his own heart, No evil shall come upon you. For who has stood in the counsel of the Lord, and has perceived and heard His word? who has marked His word, and heard it? Behold, a whirlwind of the LORD is gone forth in fury, even a grievous whirlwind: it shall fall grievously upon the head of the wicked. The anger of the LORD shall not return, until He have executed, and till He have performed the thoughts of His heart: in the latter days you shall consider it perfectly. I have not sent these prophets, yet they ran: I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied. But if they had stood in My counsel, and had caused My people to hear My words, then they should have turned them from their evil way, and from the evil of their doings. Am I a God at hand, says the LORD, and not a God afar off? Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? says the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? says the LORD. I have heard what the prophets said, that prophesy lies in My name, saying, I have dreamed, I have dreamed. How long shall this be in the heart of the prophets that prophesy lies? yea (yes), they are prophets of the deceit of their own heart; Which think to cause My people to forget My name by their dreams which they tell every man to his neighbor, as their fathers have forgotten My name for Baal. The prophet that has a dream, let him tell a dream; and he that has My word, let him speak My word faithfully. What is the chaff to the wheat? says the LORD. Is not My word like as a fire? says the LORD; and like a hammer that breaks the rock in pieces? Therefore, behold, I am against the prophets, says the LORD, that steal My words every one

from his neighbor. Behold, I am against the prophets, says the LORD, that use their tongues, and say, He says. Behold, I am against them that prophesy false dreams, says the LORD, and do tell them, and cause My people to err by their lies, and by their lightness; yet I sent them not, nor commanded them: therefore they shall not profit this people at all, says the LORD.

“And when this people, or the prophet, or a priest, shall ask you, saying, What is the burden of the LORD? you shall then say unto them, What burden? I will even forsake you, says the LORD. And as for the prophet, and the priest, and the people, that shall say, The burden of the LORD, I will even punish that man and his house. Thus shall you say every one to his neighbour, and every one to his brother, What has the LORD answered? and, What has the LORD spoken? And the burden of the LORD shall you mention no more: for every man’s word shall be his burden; for you have perverted the words of the living God, of the LORD of hosts our God. Thus shall you say to the prophet, What has the LORD answered you? And, What has the LORD spoken? But since you say, The burden of the LORD; therefore thus says the LORD; Because you say this word, The burden of the LORD, and I have sent unto you, saying, you shall not say, The burden of the LORD; Therefore, behold, I, even I, will utterly forget you, and I will forsake you, and the city that I gave you and your fathers, and cast you out of my presence: And I will bring an everlasting reproach upon you, and a perpetual shame, which shall not be forgotten” (**Jeremiah 23**).

“The word that came to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, Thus speaks the LORD God of Israel, saying, Write you all the words that I have spoken unto you in a book. For, lo, the days come, says the LORD, that I will bring again the captivity of my people Israel and Judah, says the LORD: and I will cause them to return to the land that I gave to their fathers, and they shall possess it.

“And these are the words that the LORD spoke concerning Israel and concerning Judah. For thus says the LORD; We have heard a voice of trembling, of fear, and not of peace. Ask you now, and see whether a man does travail with child? wherefore do I see every man with his hands on his loins, as a woman in travail, and all faces are turned into paleness? Alas! for that day is great, so that none is like it: it is even the time of Jacob’s trouble, but he shall be saved out of it. For it shall come to pass in that day, says the LORD of hosts, that I will break his yoke from off you neck, and will burst you bonds, and strangers shall no more serve themselves of him: But they shall serve the LORD their God, and David their king, whom I will raise up unto them.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

“Therefore fear you not, O my servant Jacob, says the LORD; neither be dismayed, O Israel: for, lo, I will save you from afar, and you seed from the land of their captivity; and Jacob shall return, and shall be in rest, and be quiet, and none shall make him afraid. For I am with you, says the LORD, to save you: though I make a full end of all nations whither I have scattered you, yet will I not make a full end of you: but I will correct you in measure, and will not leave you altogether unpunished. For thus says the LORD, you bruise is incurable, and you wound is grievous. There is none to plead you cause, that you may be bound up: you have no healing medicines. All your lovers have forgotten you; they seek you not; for I have wounded you with the wound of an enemy, with the chastisement of a cruel one, for the multitude of your iniquity; because you sins were increased. Why cry you for your affliction? Your sorrow is incurable for the multitude of your iniquity: because you sins were increased, I have done these things unto you. Therefore all they that devour you shall be devoured; and all your adversaries, every one of them, shall go into captivity; and they that spoil you shall be a spoil, and all that prey upon you will I give for a prey. For I will restore health unto you, and I will heal you of you wounds, says the LORD; because they called you an Outcast, saying, This is Zion, whom no man seeks after.

“Thus says the LORD; Behold, I will bring again the captivity of Jacob’s tents, and have mercy on his dwelling places; and the city shall be built upon her own heap, and the palace shall remain after the manner thereof. And out of them shall proceed thanksgiving and the voice of them that make merry: and I will multiply them, and they shall not be few; I will also glorify them, and they shall not be small. Their children also shall be as aforetime, and their congregation shall be established before me, and I will punish all that oppress them. And their nobles shall be of themselves, and their governor shall proceed from the midst of them; and I will cause him to draw near, and he shall approach unto me: for who is this that engaged his heart to approach unto me? says the LORD. And you shall be my people, and I will be your God. Behold, the whirlwind of the LORD goes forth with fury, a continuing whirlwind: it shall fall with pain upon the head of the wicked. The fierce anger of the LORD shall not return, until He have done it, and until He have performed the intents of his heart: in the latter days you shall consider it” (**Jeremiah 30**).

“Moreover the word of the LORD came unto Jeremiah the second time, while he was yet shut up in the court of the prison, saying, Thus says the LORD the maker thereof, the LORD that formed it, to establish it; the LORD is his name;

Call unto me, and I will answer you, and show you great and mighty things, which you know not. For thus says the LORD, the God of Israel, concerning the houses of this city, and concerning the houses of the kings of Judah, which are thrown down by the mounts, and by the sword; They come to fight with the Chaldeans, but it is to fill them with the dead bodies of men, whom I have slain in mine anger and in my fury, and for all whose wickedness I have hid my face from this city. Behold, I will bring it health and cure, and I will cure them and will reveal unto them the abundance of peace and truth. And I will cause the captivity of Judah and the captivity of Israel to return, and will build them, as at the first. And I will cleanse them from all their iniquity, whereby they have sinned against me; and I will pardon all their iniquities, whereby they have sinned, and whereby they have transgressed against me.

“And it shall be to me a name of joy, a praise and an honour before all the nations of the earth, which shall hear all the good that I do unto them: and they shall fear and tremble for all the goodness and for all the prosperity that I procure unto it. Thus says the LORD; Again there shall be heard in this place, which you say shall be desolate without man and without beast, even in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem, that are desolate, without man, and without inhabitant, and without beast, The voice of joy, and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom, and the voice of the bride, the voice of them that shall say, Praise the LORD of hosts: for the LORD is good; for his mercy endures for ever: and of them that shall bring the sacrifice of praise into the house of the LORD. For I will cause to return the captivity of the land, as at the first, says the LORD. Thus says the LORD of hosts; Again in this place, which is desolate without man and without beast, and in all the cities thereof, shall be an habitation of shepherds causing their flocks to lie down. In the cities of the mountains, in the cities of the vale, and in the cities of the south, and in the land of Benjamin, and in the places about Jerusalem, and in the cities of Judah, shall the flocks pass again under the hands of him that tells them, says the LORD. Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will perform that good thing which I have promised unto the house of Israel and to the house of Judah.

“In those days, and at that time, will I cause the Branch of righteousness to grow up unto David; and He shall execute judgment and righteousness in the land. In those days shall Judah be saved, and Jerusalem shall dwell safely: and this is the name wherewith she shall be called, The LORD our righteousness. For thus says the LORD; David shall never want a man to sit upon the throne of the house of

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Israel; Neither shall the priests the Levites want a man before me to offer burnt offerings, and to kindle meat (food) offerings, and to do sacrifice continually.

“And the word of the LORD came unto Jeremiah, saying, Thus says the LORD; If you can break my covenant of the day, and my covenant of the night, and that there should not be day and night in their season; Then may also my covenant be broken with David my servant, that he should not have a son to reign upon his throne; and with the Levites the priests, my ministers. As the host of heaven cannot be numbered, neither the sand of the sea measured: so will I multiply the seed of David my servant, and the Levites that minister unto me. Moreover the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah, saying, Consider you not what this people have spoken, saying, The two families which the LORD has chosen, He has even cast them off? thus they have despised my people, that they should be no more a nation before them. Thus says the LORD; If my covenant be not with day and night, and if I have not appointed the ordinances of heaven and earth; Then will I cast away the seed of Jacob and David my servant, so that I will not take any of his seed to be rulers over the seed of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob: for I will cause their captivity to return, and have mercy on them” (**Jeremiah 33**).

“Yet will I bring again the captivity of Moab in the latter days, says the LORD. Thus far is the judgment of Moab” (**Jeremiah 48:47**).

“But it shall come to pass in the latter days, that I will bring again the captivity of Elam, says the LORD” (**Jeremiah 49:39**).

“And you shall come up against My people of Israel, as a cloud to cover the land; it shall be in the latter days, and I will bring you against my land, that the heathen may know me, when I shall be sanctified in you, O Gog, before their eyes” (**Ezekiel 38:16**).

“Now I am come to make you understand what shall befall your people in the latter days: for yet the vision is for many days” (**Daniel 10:14**).

“For the children of Israel shall abide many days without a king, and without a prince, and without a sacrifice, and without an image, and without an ephod, and without teraphim: Afterward shall the children of Israel return, and seek the LORD their God, and David their king; and shall fear the LORD and his goodness in the latter days” (**Hosea 3:4, 5**).

“But in the last days it shall come to pass, that the mountain of the house of the LORD shall be established in the top of the mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills; and people shall flow unto it. And many nations shall come, and say, Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, and to the house of the

God of Jacob; and He will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for the law shall go forth of Zion, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem.

“And He shall judge among many people, and rebuke strong nations afar off; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more. But they shall sit every man under his vine and under his fig tree; and none shall make them afraid: for the mouth of the LORD of hosts has spoken it. For all people will walk every one in the name of his god, and we will walk in the name of the LORD our God for ever and ever. In that day, says the LORD, will I assemble her that halts, and I will gather her that is driven out, and her that I have afflicted; And I will make her that halted a remnant, and her that was cast far off a strong nation: and the LORD shall reign over them in mount Zion from henceforth, even for ever.

“And you, O tower of the flock, the strong hold of the daughter of Zion, unto you shall it come, even the first dominion; the kingdom shall come to the daughter of Jerusalem. Now why do you cry out aloud? Is there no king in you? Is your counselor perished? For pangs have taken you as a woman in travail. Be in pain, and labor to bring forth, O daughter of Zion, like a woman in travail: for now shall you go forth out of the city, and you shall dwell in the field, and you shall go even to Babylon; there shall you be delivered; there the LORD shall redeem you from the hand of your enemies. Now also many nations are gathered against you, that say, Let her be defiled, and let our eye look upon Zion. But they know not the thoughts of the LORD, neither understand they His counsel: for He shall gather them as the sheaves into the floor. Arise and thresh, O daughter of Zion: for I will make your horn iron, and I will make you hoofs brass: and you shall beat in pieces many people: and I will consecrate their gain unto the LORD, and their substance unto the LORD of the whole earth” (**Micah 4:8-13**).

“For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the LORD, to serve him with one consent” (**Zephaniah 3:9**).

“And the LORD shall be king over all the earth: in that day shall there be one LORD, and his name one” (**Zechariah 14:9**).

Christian Messianic Scriptures

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Christians accept all the Jewish messianic scriptures. Furthermore, they believe these scriptures will be literally fulfilled. As you can see from the list below, you can look forward to the day when your Jewish friends will be back in their homeland and enjoying the full blessing of the Lord as promised to them by your wonderful Lord.

The following scriptures indicate Jesus' first coming.

“And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between you seed and her seed; it shall bruise you head, and you shall bruise his heel” (Genesis 3:15).

“And God said unto Abraham, Let it not be grievous in you sight because of the lad, and because of you bondwoman; in all that Sarah has said unto you, hearken unto her voice; for in Isaac shall your seed be called” (Genesis 21:12).

“The LORD you God will raise up unto you a Prophet from the midst of you, of you brethren, like unto me; unto him you shall hearken; I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto you, and will put my words in his mouth; and He shall speak unto them all that I shall command him. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not hearken unto my words which He shall speak in my name, I will require it of him” (Deuteronomy 18:15, 18, 19).

“The God of Israel said, the Rock of Israel spoke to me, He that rules over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God. And He shall be as the light of the morning, when the sun rises, even a morning without clouds; as the tender grass springing out of the earth by clear shining after rain” (2 Samuel 23:3, 4).

“If there be a messenger with him, an interpreter, one among a thousand, to show unto man his uprightness: Then He is gracious unto him, and says, Deliver him from going down to the pit: I have found a ransom” (Job 33:23, 24).

“I have set the LORD always before me: because He is at my right hand, I shall not be moved. Therefore my heart is glad, and my glory rejoices: my flesh also shall rest in hope. For you will not leave my soul in hell; neither will you suffer your Holy One to see corruption” (Psalm 16:8-10).

“My God, my God, why have you forsaken me? why are you so far from helping me, and from the words of my roaring? But I am a worm, and no man; a reproach of men, and despised of the people. All they that see me laugh me to scorn: they shoot out the lip, they shake the head, saying, He trusted on the LORD that He would deliver him: let him deliver him, seeing He delighted in him. They

gaped upon me with their mouths, as a ravening and a roaring lion. For dogs have compassed me: the assembly of the wicked have inclosed me: they pierced my hands and my feet. I may tell all my bones: they look and stare upon me. They part my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture. I will declare you name unto my brethren: in the midst of the congregation will I praise you. They shall come, and shall declare his righteousness unto a people that shall be born, that He has done this” (Psalm 22:1, 6-8, 13, 16-18, 22, 31).

“He keeps all his bones: not one of them is broken” (Psalm 34:20).

“Sacrifice and offering you didst not desire; mine ears have you opened: burnt offering and sin offering have you not required. Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me, I delight to do you will, O my God: yea (yes), you law is within my heart” (Psalm 40:6-8).

“For the zeal of your house has eaten me up; and the reproaches of them that reproached you are fallen upon me. They gave me also gall for my meat (food); and in my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink” (Psalm 69:9, 21).

“The stone which the builders refused is become the head stone of the corner. Blessed be He that comes in the name of the LORD: we have blessed you out of the house of the LORD” (Psalm 118:22, 26).

“Therefore the LORD himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel” (Isaiah 7:14).

“And He shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence to both the houses of Israel, for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem” (Isaiah 8:14).

“And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots: And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD; And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the LORD: and He shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears: But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and He shall smite the earth: with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall He slay the wicked. And righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins. And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious” (Isaiah 11:1-5, 10).

“Strengthen you the weak hands, and confirm the feeble knees. Say to them that

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

are of a fearful heart, Be strong, fear not: behold, your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompence; He will come and save you. Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert” (Isaiah 35:3-6).

“The voice of him that cries in the wilderness, Prepare you the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a highway for our God. Behold, the LORD God will come with strong hand, and his arm shall rule for him: behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him. He shall feed his flock like a shepherd: He shall gather the lambs with his arm, and carry them in his bosom, and shall gently lead those that are with young” (Isaiah 40:3, 10, 11).

“Seventy weeks are determined upon you people and upon your holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined” (Daniel 9:24-26).

“Hear now, O Joshua the high priest, you, and you fellows that sit before you: for they are men wondered at: for, behold, I will bring forth my servant the Branch” (Zechariah 3:8).

“Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, your King comes unto you: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass. And I will cut off the chariot from Ephraim, and the horse from Jerusalem, and the battle bow shall be cut off: and he shall speak peace unto the heathen: and his dominion shall be from sea even to sea, and from the river even to the ends of the earth” (Zechariah 9:9, 10).

“Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the LORD, whom you seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom you delight in: behold, he shall come, says the LORD of hosts. And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer

unto the LORD an offering in righteousness” (Malachi 3:1, 3).

“But unto you that fear my name shall the sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and you shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall” (Malachi 4:2).

“Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delights; I have put my spirit upon him: He shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not cry, nor lift up, nor cause his voice to be heard in the street. A bruised reed shall He not break, and the smoking flax shall He not quench: He shall bring forth judgment unto truth. He shall not fail nor be discouraged, till He have set judgment in the earth: and the isles shall wait for his law. I the LORD have called you in righteousness, and will hold your hand, and will keep you, and give you for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles; To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house” (Isaiah 42:1-4, 6, 7).

“Behold, my servant shall deal prudently, He shall be exalted and extolled, and be very high. As many were astonished at you; his visage was so marred more than any man, and his form more than the sons of men: So shall He sprinkle many nations; the kings shall shut their mouths at him: for that which had not been told them shall they see; and that which they had not heard shall they consider” (Isaiah 52:13-15).

“Who has believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed? For He shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: He has no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him. He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; He was despised, and we esteemed him not. Surely He has borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and He was afflicted, yet He opened not his mouth: He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He opens not his mouth. He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for He was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was He stricken. And He made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

death; because He had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth. Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; He has put him to grief: when You shall make his soul an offering for sin, He shall see his seed, He shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for He shall bear their iniquities. Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and He shall divide the spoil with the strong; because He has poured out his soul unto death: and He was numbered with the transgressors; and He bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors” (Isaiah 53).

“Behold, I have given him for a witness to the people, a leader and commander to the people. Behold, you shall call a nation that you know not, and nations that knew not you shall run unto you because of the LORD you God, and for the Holy One of Israel; for He has glorified you” (Isaiah 55: 4, 5).

“The Spirit of the LORD God is upon me; because the LORD has anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; He has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that He might be glorified” (Isaiah 61:1-3).

“Thus says the LORD; A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation, and bitter weeping; Rahel weeping for her children refused to be comforted for her children, because they were not” (Jeremiah 31:15).

“When Israel was a child, then I loved him, and called my son out of Egypt” (Hosea 11:1).

“But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though you be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of you shall He come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting” (Micah 5: 2).

“And I said unto them, If you think good, give me my price; and if not, forbear. So they weighed for my price thirty pieces of silver. And the LORD said unto me, Cast it unto the potter: a goodly price that I was prized at of them. And I took the thirty pieces of silver, and cast them to the potter in the house of the LORD” (Zechariah 11:12, 13).

The second coming of Jesus our Lord for the Christian is His first coming for the Jewish people!

“And I will make you seed to multiply as the stars of heaven, and will give unto you seed all these countries; and in you seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; Because that Abraham obeyed my voice, and kept my charge, my commandments, my statutes, and my “The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be” (Genesis 49:10).

“I shall see him, but not now: I shall behold him, but not nigh: there shall come a Star out of Jacob, and a Sceptre shall rise out of Israel, and shall smite the corners of Moab, and destroy all the children of Sheth. Out of Jacob shall come He that shall have dominion, and shall destroy him that remains of the city” (Numbers 24:17, 19).

“The adversaries of the LORD shall be broken to pieces; out of heaven shall He thunder upon them: the LORD shall judge the ends of the earth; and He shall give strength unto his king, and exalt the horn of his anointed. And I will raise me up a faithful priest, that shall do according to that which is in mine heart and in my mind: and I will build him a sure house; and He shall walk before mine anointed for ever” (1 Samuel 2:10, 35).

“He shall build an house for my name, and I will stablish the throne of his kingdom for ever. And your house and you kingdom shall be established for ever before you: you throne shall be established for ever” (2 Samuel 7:13, 16).

“He shall build me an house, and I will stablish his throne for ever. I will be his father, and He shall be my son: and I will not take my mercy away from him, as I took it from him that was before you: But I will settle him in mine house and in my kingdom for ever: and his throne shall be established for evermore” (1 Chronicles 17:12-14).

“For I know that my redeemer lives, and that He shall stand at the latter day upon the earth:” (Job 19:25).

“Lift up your heads, O you gates; and be you lift up, you everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. Who is this King of glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle. Lift up your heads, O you gates; even lift them up, you everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. Who is this King of glory? The LORD of hosts, He is the King of glory. Selah” (Psalm 24:7-

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

10).

“I will make you name to be remembered in all generations: therefore shall the people praise you for ever and ever” (Psalm 68:17).

“Give the king you judgments, O God, and you righteousness unto the king’s son. He shall judge you people with righteousness, and you poor with judgment. The mountains shall bring peace to the people, and the little hills, by righteousness. He shall judge the poor of the people, He shall save the children of the needy, and shall break in pieces the oppressor. They shall fear you as long as the sun and moon laws” (Genesis 26:4, 5)

“The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be” (Genesis 49:10).

“I shall see him, but not now: I shall behold him, but not nigh: there shall come a Star out of Jacob, and a Sceptre shall rise out of Israel, and shall smite the corners of Moab, and destroy all the children of Sheth. Out of Jacob shall come He that shall have dominion, and shall destroy him that remains of the city” (Numbers 24:17, 19).

“The adversaries of the LORD shall be broken to pieces; out of heaven shall He thunder upon them: the LORD shall judge the ends of the earth; and He shall give strength unto his king, and exalt the horn of his anointed. And I will raise me up a faithful priest, that shall do according to that which is in mine heart and in my mind: and I will build him a sure house; and He shall walk before mine anointed for ever” (1 Samuel 2:10, 35).

“He shall build an house for my name, and I will stablish the throne of his kingdom for ever. And your house and you kingdom shall be established for ever before you: you throne shall be established for ever” (2 Samuel 7:13, 16).

“He shall build me an house, and I will stablish his throne for ever. I will be his father, and He shall be my son: and I will not take my mercy away from him, as I took it from him that was before you: But I will settle him in mine house and in my kingdom for ever: and his throne shall be established for evermore” (1 Chronicles 17:12-14).

“For I know that my redeemer lives, and that He shall stand at the “The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be” (Genesis 49:10).

“I shall see him, but not now: I shall behold him, but not nigh: there shall come a Star out of Jacob, and a Sceptre shall rise out of Israel, and shall smite the

corners of Moab, and destroy all the children of Sheth. Out of Jacob shall come He that shall have dominion, and shall destroy him that remains of the city” (Numbers 24:17, 19).

“The adversaries of the LORD shall be broken to pieces; out of heaven shall He thunder upon them: the LORD shall judge the ends of the earth; and He shall give strength unto his king, and exalt the horn of his anointed. And I will raise me up a faithful priest, that shall do according to that which is in mine heart and in my mind: and I will build him a sure house; and He shall walk before mine anointed for ever” (1 Samuel 2:10, 35).

“He shall build an house for my name, and I will stablish the throne of his kingdom for ever. And your house and you kingdom shall be established for ever before you: you throne shall be established for ever” (2 Samuel 7:13, 16).

“He shall build me an house, and I will stablish his throne for ever. I will be his father, and He shall be my son: and I will not take my mercy away from him, as I took it from him that was before you: But I will settle him in mine house and in my kingdom for ever: and his throne shall be established for evermore” (1 Chronicles 17:12-14).

“For I know that my redeemer lives, and that He shall stand at the latter day upon the earth:” (Job 19:25).

“Lift up your heads, O you gates; and be you lift up, you everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. Who is this King of glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle. Lift up your heads, O you gates; even lift them up, you everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. Who is this King of glory? The LORD of hosts, He is the King of glory. Selah” (Psalm 24:7-10).

“I will make you name to be remembered in all generations: therefore shall the people praise you for ever and ever” (Psalm 68:17).

“Give the king you judgments, O God, and you righteousness unto the king’s son. He shall judge you people with righteousness, and you poor with judgment. The mountains shall bring peace to the people, and the little hills, by righteousness. He shall judge the poor of the people, He shall save the children of the needy, and shall break in pieces the oppressor. They shall fear you as long as the sun and moon latter day upon the earth:” (Job 19:25).

“Lift up your heads, O you gates; and be you lift up, you everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. Who is this King of glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle. Lift up your heads, O you gates; even lift

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

them up, you everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. Who is this King of glory? The LORD of hosts, He is the King of glory. Selah” (Psalm 24:7-10).

“I will make your name to be remembered in all generations: therefore shall the people praise you for ever and ever” (Psalm 68:17).

“Give the king your judgments, O God, and your righteousness unto the king’s son. He shall judge your people with righteousness, and your poor with judgment. The mountains shall bring peace to the people, and the little hills, by righteousness. He shall judge the poor of the people, He shall save the children of the needy, and shall break in pieces the oppressor. They shall fear you as long as the sun and moon endure, throughout all generations. He shall come down like rain upon the mown grass: as showers that water the earth. In his days shall the righteous flourish; and abundance of peace so long as the moon endures. He shall have dominion also from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth. They that dwell in the wilderness shall bow before him; and his enemies shall lick the dust. The kings of Tarshish and of the isles shall bring presents: the kings of Sheba and Seba shall offer gifts. Yea (yes), all kings shall fall down before him: all nations shall serve him. For He shall deliver the needy when he cries; the poor also, and him that has no helper. He shall spare the poor and needy, and shall save the souls of the needy. He shall redeem their soul from deceit and violence: and precious shall their blood be in his sight. And he shall live, and to him shall be given of the gold of Sheba: prayer also shall be made for him continually; and daily shall he be praised. There shall be an handful of corn in the earth upon the top of the mountains; the fruit thereof shall shake like Lebanon: and they of the city shall flourish like grass of the earth. His name shall endure for ever: his name shall be continued as long as the sun: and men shall be blessed in him: all nations shall call him blessed. Blessed be the LORD God, the God of Israel, who only does wondrous things” (Psalm 72:1-18).

“your seed will I establish for ever, and build up your throne to all generations. Selah. Then you spoke in vision to Your holy one, and said, I have laid help upon one that is mighty; I have exalted one chosen out of the people. Also I will make him my firstborn, higher than the kings of the earth. His seed also will I make to endure for ever, and his throne as the days of heaven. Once have I sworn by my holiness that I will not lie unto David. His seed shall endure for ever, and his throne as the sun before me” (Psalm 89:4, 19, 27, 29, 35, 36).

“The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit you at my right hand, until I make your

enemies your footstool. The LORD shall send the rod of your strength out of Zion: rule you in the midst of your enemies. You people shall be willing in the day of your power, in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning: you have the dew of your youth. The LORD has sworn, and will not repent, you are a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek. The LORD at your right hand shall strike through kings in the day of his wrath. He shall judge among the heathen, he shall fill the places with the dead bodies; he shall wound the heads over many countries. He shall drink of the brook in the way: therefore shall he lift up the head” (Psalm 110:1-7).

“And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the LORD’S house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it. And many people shall go and say, Come you, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. And he shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning-hooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more” (Isaiah 2:2-4).

“And the key of the house of David will I lay upon his shoulder; so he shall open, and none shall shut; and he shall shut, and none shall open” (Isaiah 22:22).

“Behold, I will make you a new sharp threshing instrument having teeth: you shall thresh the mountains, and beat them small, and shall make the hills as chaff. You shall fan them, and the wind shall carry them away, and the whirlwind shall scatter them: and you shall rejoice in the LORD, and shall glory in the Holy One of Israel” (Isaiah 41:15, 16).

“For as the earth brings forth her bud, and as the garden causes the things that are sown in it to spring forth; so the LORD God will cause righteousness and praise to spring forth before all the nations” (Isaiah 62:11).

“Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth. In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is his name whereby he shall be called, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS” (Jeremiah 23: 5, 6).

“But they shall serve the LORD their God, and David their king, whom I will raise up unto them” (Jeremiah 30:9).

“In those days, and at that time, will I cause the Branch of righteousness to grow

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

up unto David; and he shall execute judgment and righteousness in the land. In those days shall Judah be saved, and Jerusalem shall dwell safely: and this is the name wherewith she shall be called, The LORD our righteousness” (Jeremiah 33:15, 16).

“And I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even my servant David; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd. And I the LORD will be their God, and my servant David a prince among them; I the LORD have spoken it” (Ezekiel 34:23, 24).

“And David my servant shall be king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments, and observe my statutes, and do them. And they shall dwell in the land that I have given unto Jacob my servant, wherein your fathers have dwelt; and they shall dwell therein, even they, and their children, and their children’s children for ever: and my servant David shall be their prince for ever” (Ezekiel 37:24, 25).

“And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever. Forasmuch as you saw that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God has made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter: and the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure” (Daniel 2:44, 45).

“Afterward shall the children of Israel return, and seek the LORD their God, and David their king; and shall fear the LORD and his goodness in the latter days” (Hosea 3:5).

“And I will shake all nations, and the desire of all nations shall come: and I will fill this house with glory, says the LORD of hosts” (Haggai 2:7).

“And speak unto him, saying, Thus speaks the LORD of hosts, saying, Behold the man whose name is The Branch; and he shall grow up out of his place, and he shall build the temple of the LORD: Even he shall build the temple of the LORD; and he shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon his throne; and he shall be a priest upon his throne: and the counsel of peace shall be between them both” (Zechariah 6:12, 13).

“And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of “The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be” (Genesis 49:10).

“I shall see him, but not now: I shall behold him, but not nigh: there shall come a Star out of Jacob, and a Sceptre shall rise out of Israel, and shall smite the corners of Moab, and destroy all the children of Sheth. Out of Jacob shall come He that shall have dominion, and shall destroy him that remains of the city” (Numbers 24:17, 19).

“The adversaries of the LORD shall be broken to pieces; out of heaven shall He thunder upon them: the LORD shall judge the ends of the earth; and He shall give strength unto his king, and exalt the horn of his anointed. And I will raise me up a faithful priest, that shall do according to that which is in mine heart and in my mind: and I will build him a sure house; and He shall walk before mine anointed for ever” (1 Samuel 2:10, 35).

“He shall build an house for my name, and I will establish the throne of his kingdom for ever. And your house and you kingdom shall be established for ever before you: you throne shall be established for ever” (2 Samuel 7:13, 16).

“He shall build me an house, and I will establish his throne for ever. I will be his father, and He shall be my son: and I will not take my mercy away from him, as I took it from him that was before you: But I will settle him in mine house and in my kingdom for ever: and his throne shall be established for evermore” (1 Chronicles 17:12-14).

“For I know that my redeemer lives, and that He shall stand at the latter day upon the earth:” (Job 19:25).

“Lift up your heads, O you gates; and be you lift up, you everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. Who is this King of glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle. Lift up your heads, O you gates; even lift them up, you everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. Who is this King of glory? The LORD of hosts, He is the King of glory. Selah” (Psalm 24:7-10).

“I will make you name to be remembered in all generations: therefore shall the people praise you for ever and ever” (Psalm 68:17).

“Give the king you judgments, O God, and you righteousness unto the king’s son. He shall judge you people with righteousness, and you poor with judgment. The mountains shall bring peace to the people, and the little hills, by righteousness. He shall judge the poor of the people, He shall save the children of the needy, and shall break in pieces the oppressor. They shall fear you as long as the sun and moon Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

mourns for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn” (Zechariah 12:10).

“In that day there shall be a fountain opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness. And one shall say unto him, What are these wounds in your hands? Then he shall answer, Those with which I was wounded in the house of my friends. Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow, says the LORD of hosts: smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered: and I will turn mine hand upon the little ones” (Zechariah 13:1, 6, 7).

“And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south” (Zechariah 14:4).

In these scriptures we see both the first and second coming running parallel with each other.

“And I will bless them that bless you, and curse him that curses you: and in you shall all families of the earth be blessed” (Genesis 12:3).

“And God said, Sarah you wife shall bear you a son indeed; and you shall call his name Isaac: and I will establish my covenant with him for an everlasting covenant, and with his seed after him” (Genesis 17:19).

“And in you seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because you have obeyed my voice” (Genesis 22:18).

“And give you the blessing of Abraham, to you, and to your seed with you; that you may inherit the land wherein you are a stranger, which God gave unto Abraham. And you seed shall be as the dust of the earth, and you shall spread abroad to the west, and to the east, and to the north, and to the south: and in you and in you seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed” (Genesis 28:4, 14).

“Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He that sits in the heavens shall laugh: the LORD shall have them in derision. Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure. Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. I will declare

the decree: the LORD has said unto me, you are my son; this day have I begotten you. Ask of me, and I shall give you the heathen for your inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for you possession. you shall break them with a rod of iron; you shall dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel. Be wise now therefore, O you kings: be instructed, you judges of the earth. Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the son, lest he be angry, and you perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him" (Psalms 2).

"You are fairer than the children of men: grace is poured into you lips: therefore God has blessed you for ever. Gird you sword upon you thigh, O most mighty, with you glory and you majesty. And in you majesty ride prosperously because of truth and meekness and righteousness; and you right hand shall teach you terrible things. your arrows are sharp in the heart of the king's enemies; whereby the people fall under you. Your throne, O God, is for ever and ever: the sceptre of you kingdom is a right sceptre. you love righteousness, and hate wickedness: therefore God, you God, has anointed you with the oil of gladness above you fellows. I will make you name to be remembered in all generations: therefore shall the people praise you for ever and ever" (Psalm 45:2-7, 17).

"Give ear, O Shepherd of Israel, you that lead Joseph like a flock; you that dwell between the cherubims, shine forth. Let you hand be upon the man of you right hand, upon the son of man whom you made strong for thyself" (Psalm 80:1, 17).

"Of old have you laid the foundation of the earth: and the heavens are the work of you hands. They shall perish, but you shall endure: yea (yes), all of them shall wax old like a garment; as a vesture shall you change them, and they shall be changed: But you are the same, and you years shall have no end" (Psalm 102:25, 27).

"The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them has the light shined. For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The mighty God, the everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this" (Isaiah 9:2, 6, 7).

"In that day shall the LORD of hosts be for a crown of glory, and for a diadem

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

of beauty, unto the residue of his people, Therefore thus says the LORD God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believes shall not make haste” (Isaiah 28:5, 16).

“I am the LORD, your Holy One, the creator of Israel, your King” (Isaiah 43:15).

“Tell you, and bring them near; yea (yes), let them take counsel together: who has declared this from ancient time? who has told it from that time? have not I the LORD? and there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me” (Isaiah 45:21).

“Thus says the LORD, the Redeemer of Israel, and his Holy One, to him whom man despises, to him whom the nation abhors, to a servant of rulers, Kings shall see and arise, princes also shall worship, because of the LORD that is faithful, and the Holy One of Israel, and he shall choose you. Thus says the LORD, In an acceptable time have I heard you, and in a day of salvation have I helped you: and I will preserve you, and give you for a covenant of the people, to establish the earth, to cause to inherit the desolate heritages; That you may say to the prisoners, Go forth; to them that are in darkness, show yourselves. They shall feed in the ways, and their pastures shall be in all high places. They shall not hunger nor thirst; neither shall the heat nor sun smite them: for he that has mercy on them shall lead them, even by the springs of water shall he guide them” (Isaiah 49:7-10).

“And he saw that there was no man, and wondered that there was no intercessor: therefore his arm brought salvation unto him; and his righteousness, it sustained him. And the Redeemer shall come to Zion, and unto them that turn from transgression in Jacob, says the LORD” (Isaiah 59:16, 20).

“And the Gentiles shall come to you light, and kings to the brightness of you rising” (Isaiah 60:3).

“Who is this that comes from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah? this that is glorious in his apparel, traveling in the greatness of his strength? I that speak in righteousness, mighty to save. I have trodden the winepress alone; and of the people there was none with me: for I will tread them in mine anger, and trample them in my fury; and their blood shall be sprinkled upon my garments, and I will stain all my raiment. For he said, Surely they are my people, children that will not lie: so he was their Saviour. In all their affliction he was afflicted, and the angel of his presence saved them: in his love and in his pity he redeemed them; and he bare them, and carried them all the days of old” (Isaiah 63:1, 3, 8, 9).

“Seventy weeks are determined upon you people and upon your holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two (62) weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. And after threescore and two (62) weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined” (Daniel 9:24-26).

“Hear now, O Joshua the high priest, you, and you fellows that sit before you: for they are men wondered at: for, behold, I will bring forth my servant the Branch” (Zechariah 3:8).

“Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, your King comes unto you: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass. And I will cut off the chariot from Ephraim, and the horse from Jerusalem, and the battle bow shall be cut off: and he shall speak peace unto the heathen: and his dominion shall be from sea even to sea, and from the river even to the ends of the earth” (Zechariah 9:9, 10).

“Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the LORD, whom you seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom you delight in: behold, he shall come, says the LORD of hosts. And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness” (Malachi 3:1, 3).

“But unto you that fear my name shall the sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and you shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall” (Malachi 4:2).

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved (Acts 4:12). Jesus said to him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man comes unto the Father, but by Me (John 14:6).

CHAPTER 9

THE SAVIOR OF LOST MANKIND

Everyone in the whole human race is hopelessly lost in sin's dark night. There is no hope for you outside of a divine intervention. The beauty is, God has intervened on your behalf through the lord Jesus Christ. By accepting God's plan of salvation you can be saved from your sins and have a personal, loving relationship with God through the Lord Jesus Christ.

Are you ready to explore the wonders of God's salvation plan?

The next four (4) chapters will guide you through this delightful land of joy and peace with God.

KEY 1 - God has a plan for sinful man.

(See "The Way of Salvation," on page 56 to see what God's plan is for sinful man.)

KEY 2 - People sin individually.

"But if you will not do so, behold, you have sinned against the LORD: and be sure your sin will find you out" (Numbers 32:23). (See Ezekiel 18:20.)

KEY 3 - There are national as well as individual sins.

"Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against His Anointed, saying, Let us break Their bands asunder, and cast away Their cords (restraints) from us" (Psalm 2:1-3).

KEY 4 - You are born with a proneness to go the way of sin.

"For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin. For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good. Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwells in me. For I know that in me that is, in

my flesh,) dwells no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwells in me. I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me” (Romans 7:14-21).

KEY 5 - You cannot save yourself from your sins.

“O wretched man that I am! Who shall deliver me from the body of this death?” (Romans 7:24).

KEY 6 – Everyone, including you, needs a Savior.

“And you has He quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; Wherein in time past you walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience: Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others” (Ephesians 2:1-3).

KEY 7 – God is the only One Who can give you a Savior.

“For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave Himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time” (I Timothy 2:5, 6).

KEY 8 - God has given you a Savior.

“For God so loved the world, that He gave His Only Begotten Son, that whosoever believes in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through Him might be saved” (John 3:16, 17).

KEY 9 - God’s plan of salvation must be accepted by you.

“That was the True Light, which lights every man that comes into the world. He was in the world, and the world was made by Him, and the world knew Him not. He came unto His own, and His own received Him not. But as many as received Him, to them gave He power (the right) to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His name: Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God” (John 1:9-13).

KEY 10 - Jesus Christ is the only Savior you have.

“Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved” (Acts 4:12).

KEY 11 - God’s salvation deals with your spirit, soul and body.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

“And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. Faithful is He that calls you, who also will do it” (I Thessalonians 5:23, 24).

KEY 12 - God’s salvation was foretold years before it came to you.

(See “Prophecies concerning the Messiah.” above)

KEY 13 - There are types of the plan of salvation found in the Bible.

(See the book of Hebrews for examples of this.)

KEY 14 – There are things found in nature that illustrate salvation.

(beauty in nature, animals protecting their young, metamorphosis).

KEY 15 - There are people in the Bible who illustrate Jesus’ love-Joseph, Joshua, Moses, to name a few.

KEY 16 - Your Savior is God in the flesh (the Perfect God-man).

“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. ... And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth” (John 1:1, 14).

KEY 17 - Jesus was supernaturally created in the womb of Mary.

“Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as His mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Spirit” (Matthew 1:18).

KEY 18 - Jesus was supernaturally raised from the dead.

(See Matthew 28; Mark 16; Luke 24; John 20 and 1 Corinthians 15:1- 24)

KEY 19 - Jesus’ salvation brings freedom to you from sin and sinning.

“For if we have been planted together in the likeness of His death, we shall be also in the likeness of His resurrection: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth (from now on) we should not serve sin” (Romans 6:5, 6).

“There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit” (Romans 8:1-4).

KEY 20 - Jesus was born without sin. He lived a sinless life among us.

“For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin” (Hebrews 4:15).

KEY 21 - Your salvation will be completed when Jesus returns.

(See Romans 8:18-25.)

Chapter 9 Study Questions

The answers to these questions are found in Romans, the Gospel of John and first John in your New Testament Bible!

1. Have you accepted Jesus as your own personal Savior?
2. In what ways do people sin against God:
 - a. as individuals?
 - b. as a nation?
3. Can you quit the sin business on your own? Explain!
4. Why do you need a Savior?
5. Who can provide salvation? How? Why?
6. Do all roads lead to Heaven?
7. Can someone else be saved for you?
8. What is meant by full salvation?
9. Was salvation an afterthought of God? See Appendix F, number XIII Salvation.
10. What are some “types of salvation” found in the Bible?
11. What are some illustrations of salvation found in nature?
12. What makes Jesus different from everyone else?
13. Why is Jesus’ resurrection so important to your salvation?
14. What is the importance of your coming resurrection?

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to everyone that believes; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek (Romans 1:16).

CHAPTER 10

THE GOSPELS AND THE GOSPEL

The gospels are the first four books in the New Testament—Matthew, Mark, Luke and John. These are called gospels because they give the good news of personal salvation. These give the biography of Jesus Christ in four settings.

You are invited to come with me as I lead you
into the arms of your Lord Jesus Christ!

KEY 1 - The Gospel of Matthew portrays Jesus as the King of the Jews. “The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham” (Matthew 1:1).

KEY 2 - The Gospel of Mark portrays Jesus as the Son of God Who becomes the suffering servant.

“The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God; ... For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give His life a ransom for many” (Mark 1:1; 10:45).

KEY 3 - The Gospel of Luke portrays Jesus as the perfect human life. (This unfolds as you read the book of Luke.)

KEY 4 - The Gospel of John portrays Jesus as God in the flesh.

“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. ... And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth” (John 1:1, 14).

KEY 5 - In the Gospel of Matthew Jesus is the Lion of the Tribe of Judah.

KEY 6 - In the Gospel of Mark Jesus is God’s Servant who becomes the Lamb brought to the slaughter. (Read Isaiah 52:13-53:12.)

KEY 7 - In the Gospel of Luke Jesus is the Son of Man Who “went about doing good and healing all who were oppressed by the Devil.”

KEY 8 - In the Gospel of John, Jesus is all you will ever need for time and

eternity.

(Study the “I AM’s” of this Gospel to see what I mean.)

KEY 9 - These four (4) Gospels give you the same gospel (good news). (Find a “Harmony of the Gospels” and study it.)

KEY 10 - The genealogies of Matthew and Luke are Joseph’s and Mary’s, respectively.

KEY 11 - Not all the activities of Jesus are given in these Gospels.

“And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen” (John 21:25).

KEY 12 - Not all the sayings of Jesus are given in these gospels.

For other sayings of Jesus see: Acts 1:4-8; 9:1-19; 10:12-15; 11:7- 16; 18:7-11; 20:35; 22:7-21; 23:11; 26:14-18; 1 Corinthians 11:24, 25; 2 Corinthians 12:9; 1 Timothy 5:18; Revelation 1:8-3:22; 16:15; 22:6-20.

KEY 13 - The Gospel is not a thing. The Gospel is Jesus Christ—Who is your Savior and Lord.

KEY 14 - The Gospel is that, through Jesus Christ, you can have a loving fellowship with God.

KEY 15 - Jesus is God’s one and only answer for your sin problem.

KEY 16 - Jesus is all you have, and all you need.

Chapter 10 Study Questions

1. Go through Matthew and find the times Jesus is shown to be the King. Have you made Him your King?
2. Go through Mark and see how Jesus is shown to be a suffering servant. Are you willing to follow His example?
3. Go through Luke and see how Jesus is shown to have lived a life without sin in the flesh. Are you living a Spirit-filled life?
4. Go through John and see how John proves Jesus is God in the flesh. Why is this so important to your salvation?
5. What can you learn about Jesus in the Gospels?
6. What can you learn about the Gospel in the Gospels?
7. Why did Jesus have to die?
8. Could Jesus be your Savior without rising from the dead?
9. What did you find out when you studied the “Harmony of the Gospels?”

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

10. What is the importance of the genealogies in Matthew and Luke?
11. Why do you not have more of Jesus' early life in the Gospels?
12. What do the sayings of Jesus in other books of the Bible tell you about Jesus' life and works?
13. What is the Gospel? Is the Gospel a thing or a Person?
14. Do you know everything Jesus did and said while He was on this earth?
15. What do the "I AM's" of John's gospel tell you about Jesus?
16. How can you know Jesus is the true Savior of humanity?
17. How can you know Jesus is Who He is said to be in the Gospels?
18. How do you know you have the actual sayings of Jesus?
19. What do the Gospels tell you about Jesus' birth?
20. What do the Gospels tell you about Jesus' life on earth?
21. What does the word "gospel" mean?
22. What is the importance of Jesus being the Lamb of God?
23. In what way did Jesus show Himself to be a servant?
24. What was Jesus' attitude toward sin?
25. What was Jesus' attitude toward the sinner?
26. How did Jesus use parables to get His message across?
27. How do you know Jesus was and will always be God?
28. What do the Gospels show you about Jesus as Creator and Sustainer of the universe? The answer to this question is found in John 1:1-3.

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Come unto me, all you that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and you shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light (Matthew 11:28-30).

CHAPTER 11

THE GREAT COMMISSION CALL TO THE CHURCH

The great commission mandate is given in the four Scriptures found in key 1. The church is expected to carry out this commission. Any church which will not follow this commission mandate is not considered a Christian church. The gates of hell will not prevail against a church that is carrying out this commission.

Are you ready to have a great adventure
with me and your Lord Jesus Christ?

KEY I - Jesus gave the Church a Great Commission.

“And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen” (Matthew 28:18-20).

“And He said unto them, Go you into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believes and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believes not shall be damned” (Mark 16:15, 16).

“And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in His name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And you are witnesses of these things. And, behold, I send the promise of My Father upon you: but tarry you in the city of Jerusalem, until you be endued with power from on high” (Luke 24:46-49).

“And He said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father has put in His own power. But you shall receive power, after that the Holy Spirit is come upon you: and you shall be witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judæa, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth” (Acts 1:7, 8).

THE GREAT COMMISSION:

KEY 2 - is to be carried out through the power of the Holy Spirit, Who indwells all those who have made Jesus Lord of their lives; (Read the Book of Acts to see how this is to be accomplished.)

KEY 3 - includes preaching the Gospel;

KEY 4 - extends to every person in the whole world;

KEY 5 - is given to all the church members working with the clergy;

KEY 6 - includes making disciples and baptizing them;

KEY 7 - includes teaching God's Word;

KEY 8 - includes witnessing for Jesus;

KEY 9 - puts the "go" in the Gospel.

KEY 10 – You are to accept the work of God's Holy Spirit, which is wrought through His church or be condemned to a lake of fire and brimstone.

KEY 11 - God has promised that He would be with the Church, which follows the Great Commission mandate, even unto the end of the world.

KEY 12 - The Church is still under the Great Commission mandate.

Chapter 11 Study Questions

1. What makes the Great Commission great?
2. Who gave the Great Commission?
3. To whom did He give the Great Commission?
4. Is the Great Commission still in effect?
5. What all is included in the Great Commission?
6. How is the Great Commission to progress?
7. How well has the Great Commission been followed through the ages?
8. Are you doing your part to fulfill the Great Commission?
9. What promise did Jesus give to the Church that follows the Great Commission?
10. How much of the organized church is involved in fulfilling the Great Commission?
11. Can everyone help with the Great Commission?
12. Do you have to have a theological education to be a part of the Great Commission?
13. Do you have to have a certain personality to be a part of the Great

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Commission?

14. Do you have to be of a particular ethnic group to be part of the Great Commission?
15. How does the Book of Acts model a strategy for you to fulfill the Great Commission?
16. What does it mean to say, “You are either a missionary or the mission field?”
17. How do you witness for Jesus?
18. In what way does God the Holy Spirit enable you to fulfill the Great Commission?
19. How do you make disciples?
20. Where does Christian unity come into play in the Great Commission?
21. Does the salvation of lost humanity include the Great Commission?
22. What should be your strategy to fulfill the Great Commission today?
23. What methods should you use to fulfill the Great Commission today?
24. What material should you use to fulfill the Great Commission?
25. Are the days of revival at a standstill?
26. Are the rewards for keeping the Great Commission worth the price you must pay to fulfill it?
27. What place does prayer take in helping you fulfill the Great Commission?
28. Where does faithful stewardship come into play in helping you fulfill the Great Commission?
29. Where does a Christian lifestyle come into play in helping you fulfill the Great Commission?
30. What is your strategy for fulfilling the Great Commission? What do you need to change? What do you need to do better?

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words (1 Thessalonians 4:16-18).

CHAPTER 12

JESUS IS COMING TO RECEIVE HIS KINGDOM

The Lord Jesus Christ is the King of kings. He has promised that He will come again (John 14:1-3). As He was going up into heaven, angels of God proclaimed that He would return. (see acts 1:10, 11.) The hope of the world is Jesus' coming again. When Jesus returns He will judge the devil and his followers, who will be cast into hellfire. Jesus and His followers will rule for all eternity in a New Heaven and a New Earth prepared by God for those who are saved from their sins by the finished work of Jesus Christ.

Are you ready to enter Jesus' Kingdom with His redeemed ones?

KEY 1 - The King of kings is the Lord Jesus Christ.

KEY 2 - His Eternal Kingdom is what is called Heaven.

KEY 3 - This will take place when Jesus comes again.

KEY 4 - Jesus' coming again could be any time.

KEY 5 - This is the great hope of the Christian.

KEY 6 - When Jesus comes back, He will set up a new heaven and a new earth. (See Revelation 21, 22.)

KEY 7 - When Jesus comes back, everyone will be judged according to his or her works.

Chapter 12 Study Questions

1. Who is the King of kings and Lord of lords?
2. What gives the King of kings the right to an eternal kingdom?
3. Why is the King of kings taking this eternal kingdom?
4. Is there any place for the devil and his angels in the eternal kingdom?

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

5. Will sinners have a place in the eternal kingdom?
6. What does the Book of Revelation tell you about the eternal kingdom?
7. Does the Bible give an itemized list of events leading up to the King of kings coming to set up His kingdom?
8. What does 1 Corinthians 15 tell you about the eternal kingdom?
9. Do you know the day or hour when Jesus is coming again?
10. What does Matthew 24 and 25 tell you about the eternal kingdom?
11. Will there be a thousand-year reign of Jesus upon this earth?
12. Give scriptures to back up your answer to question 11.
13. What is meant by “heaven is a prepared place for a prepared people?”
14. Are you ready for Jesus’ second coming—if not, why not?
15. What do you think is going to happen when Jesus comes again?
16. How does Matthew 13:37-43 answer question 15?
17. How does Matthew 13:47-50 answer question 15?
18. According to Matthew 24:29-31, when is Jesus coming back?
19. Does Matthew 24:36-41 teach you something different than what you have been taught by the church? Who is going to be taken away at this time?
20. Will God’s people go through the great tribulation?
21. Does the Book of Revelation give us a list of events leading up to Jesus’ coming to set up His kingdom? Is this what you believe?

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine. Neglect not the gift that is in you, which was given you by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery. Meditate upon these things; give yourself wholly to them; that your profiting may appear to all. Take heed unto yourself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this you shall both save yourself and them that hear you (1 Timothy 4:13-16).

CHAPTER 13

THE FORMULATING OF A CHRISTIAN THEOLOGY

There are many theologies which are called Christian these days. The true Christian theology stands completely on the teachings of God's Word. Much is involved in coming up with a Christian theology.

KEY 1 - The whole Bible is the only source used in formulating a Christian theology.

KEY 2 - The Book of Acts shows you how the Christian theology is actively carried out.

KEY 3 - The Books of Romans through Revelation gives you the elements for a Christian theology.

KEY 4 - The Old Testament is the New Testament concealed and the New Testament is the Old Testament revealed.

KEY 5 - God's revelation of Himself and His salvation for mankind is progressive. One revelation builds on the one before it. Jesus is the complete revelation. You have the complete revelation in the Christian Bible. There is no other new revelation needed today.

KEY 6 - You must have a right understanding of origins to understand God and His salvation for you.

KEY 7 - You must let the Bible interpret itself within the proper context.

KEY 8 - You must have a right understanding of the extent of the fall of mankind.

KEY 9 - You must understand God's attitude toward sin.

KEY 10 - You must have a proper definition of sin.

KEY 11 - You must understand the meaning of grace.

KEY 12 - You must know what is meant by being "saved by faith alone."

KEY 13 - To have a Christian theology, you must know the relationship between

faith and works.

KEY 14 - A Christian theology must accept the whole Bible as plenary-inspired. That is, the whole Bible was given to you—without error in any of its parts—through Divine intervention.

KEY 15 - You must have an understanding of the atonement.

KEY 16 - Your theology must be Christ-centered.

KEY 17 - You must have an understanding of where the Church of Jesus Christ fits into God's total program for mankind.

KEY 18 - You must have an understanding of where the Jewish nation fits into God's total program for mankind.

KEY 19 - To have a Christian theology you must understand end-time events and how they point to Jesus' coming kingdom.

KEY 20 - You must have a right relationship with God.

KEY 21 - There must be an understanding of the Great Commission of Jesus Christ to His Church.

After studying "Formulating a Christian Theology" on pages 180-192, answer the following questions.

Chapter 13 Study Questions

1. Where do you find the material to formulate a Christian theology?
2. What makes a Christian theology different from other theologies?
3. What is meant by "God's revelation to humanity is progressive?"
4. Where do you find out about origins in the Bible?
5. What does the Bible tell you about God?
6. What does the Bible tell you about the Word of God?
7. What does the Word of God tell you about angels?
8. What is mankind's biggest problem?
9. What is meant by a "literal interpretation of the Scriptures?"
10. What is the extent of the fall of humanity?
11. What is God's attitude toward sin? What is God's attitude toward the sinner?
12. What is a good definition of sin?
13. What does the Bible tell you about God's grace?
14. What is the purpose of the Church of Jesus Christ?
15. What is the Christian ministry?

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

16. What is meant by the “plenary inspiration” of the Scriptures?
17. How are the Church and the State to function together?
18. What is meant by “atonement?”
19. What is meant by “the world?”
20. What is meant by “free moral agency?”
21. Give some false ideas of God you oppose.
22. Why do you only accept the 66 books of the Bible as inspired?
23. Where do church history and traditions come in for formulating a Christian theology? This question takes some thinking!
24. How is everything going to end?
25. How are you saved from sin?
26. What is a good definition of “faith?”
27. How do faith and works come together in a Christian’s life?
28. Can you formulate a Christian theology from the material you are studying?

FORMULATE A CHRISTIAN THEOLOGY!

Formulating a Christian theology!

I. GOD

I believe that there is only one true and living God Who is worthy of my worship and service, that He as Eternal Spirit is transcendent of His creation; infinite in all His attributes; omnipotent; omnipresent; omniscient; infinite in wisdom; perfect in goodness, mercy, love, justice and faithfulness; holy in His essential nature, attributes and purpose; and as Triune God in essential being is revealed as Father, Son and Holy Spirit.

I believe God the Father is co-eternal, co-equal, consubstantial and has personal subsistence with the Son and the Holy Spirit.

I stand opposed to **tritheism**, that there are three gods; **sabellianism**, that there is one God manifest in three relationships to the human race; **arianism**, that the Godhead consists of one eternal person, who in the beginning created a superangelic being, the only begotten Son, who in turn created the Holy Spirit; **polytheism**, that there are many gods; dualism, that the universe is composed of two impersonal forces—mind and matter; and **pantheism**, that God and the universe are one and the same.

I believe that God's providence is inherent in His sovereign will in maintaining the universe, that the miracles of God on earth are the laws of God in heaven, and that He does not violate the free moral agency of His created beings in things pertaining to their salvation and eternal destiny.

Scriptures: Deuteronomy 4:35; 1 Kings 8:60; Psalm 86:9, 10; Isaiah 43:10, 11; John 17:3; Ephesians 4:6; Colossians 1:15; Genesis 21:33; Psalm 90:2; Revelation 4:8-11; Jeremiah 23:24; 2 Chronicles 6:18; Job 11:7-9; Psalm 147:5; Isaiah 40:28; Romans 11:33-36; Jeremiah 32:17; Revelation 19:6; Genesis 1:1; Psalm 33:13, 14; Jeremiah 23:23, 24; Isaiah 46:9, 10; Isaiah 40:12-15; Psalm 113:5-9; Daniel 2:20-22; Ephesians 1:7-9; Matthew 19:17; 1 Peter 1:16, 17; Jonah 3:4, 10; Psalm 104:4, 5; Matthew 3:13-17; Matthew 28:19; 2 Corinthians 13:14; Ephesians 2:18.

John 3:13; 6:32, 33, 38, 50, 51, 58, 62; John 1:1-3, 14; Hebrews 2:14-16; 1 Timothy 1:17; 6:16; Isaiah 9:6; Revelation 1:11; 2:8; 22:13; Matthew 28:20; John

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

2:24, 25; Galatians 2:3; Philippians 3:21; Hebrews 1:10-12; John 16:15; Colossians 2:9; Matthew 9:2-7; Galatians 3:13; Philippians 3:20, 21; Hebrews 1:6; Revelation 5:11, 12; Philippians 2:9-11; John 14:16, 17, 26; 15:26; 17:7, 14, 15; 1 Corinthians 2:10, 11; Acts 15:28; Acts 7:51; Isaiah 63:10; Ephesians 4:30; Matthew 12:31, 32; Acts 5:3, 4, 9; Genesis 6:3; John 16:13; Romans 8:26; 15:19; 1 Corinthians 6:11; Acts 13:2, 4; 1 Corinthians 12:11; Ephesians 1:13; 4:30; 2 Timothy 3:16; Isaiah 6:5, 9; Romans 8:26, 27; 1 Corinthians 2:10, 11; Romans 15:19; Titus 3:5; 2 Corinthians 13:14; Matthew 10:20; Galatians 4:6; Matthew 28:18; Ephesians 1:22; Hebrews 1:3; Revelation 17:14.

Job 9:5-8; Psalm 104:32; Matthew 5:45; Isaiah 40:12.

II. THE BIBLE

I believe the Bible is God's complete revelation of His will for the whole human race concerning our eternal salvation, as well as our duties and privileges in relation to His sovereign will for time and eternity, which could not be revealed by His material creation or human reasoning.

I believe that God's progressive revelation was completed within my present Bible of 39 books in the Old Testament and 27 books in the New Testament, so that whatever is not found written therein is not to be imposed as a doctrine or practice upon the Church of Jesus Christ.

I believe the Bible became the infallible Word of God as God superintended the natural powers and faculties of holy men to write His Word without error. This is best explained in 2 Peter 1:20, 21.

I believe the purpose of the Bible is clearly stated in 2 Timothy 3:16, 17.

I believe in a literal interpretation of the Bible. I stand opposed to all forms of criticism which do not accept the whole Bible as the Word of God. There was a flood, Jonah was swallowed by a great fish, Jesus was born of the virgin Mary, etc.

I stand opposed to any further written or oral revelation that is to bring new light

to the Church or to the world. Furthermore, I do not accept the apocryphal books as a part of the Old Testament Scriptures.

Scriptures: 2 Peter 1:20, 21; 3:16; 2 Timothy 3:16, 17; Psalm 119; Matthew 2:23; John 6:45; Revelation 22:18, 19; Deuteronomy 4:2; 12:32; Proverbs 30:6; Exodus 32:33.

III. SPECIAL CREATION

I believe true science and a correct interpretation of the Bible are never in conflict with each other. The Bible acts as a supplement to the revealed truths of creation.

I believe special creation reveals the existence of God, His natural attributes, His works, and awakens me to a sense of accountability to Him.

I believe as my Creator and Redeemer, God has the authority to command my loving service and complete obedience for time and eternity.

I believe the creation was planned by God the Father, brought forth by God the Son through God the Holy Spirit, as an act of His love and desire for fellowship and exultation.

I believe God created everything (material and spiritual) from nothing and formed them into the present creation as explained in Genesis 1 and 2 and Hebrews 11:3.

I stand opposed to **atheistic materialism**, which acts as though God does not exist and material is eternal; **pantheism**, which says matter is the eternal God; and all forms of **naturalistic progressive evolution**, which deny the plain teaching of God's Holy Word.

Scriptures: Gen. 1; 2; Hebrews 11:3; Psalm 19:1-6; 33:6; 148:5; John 9:17; Genesis 49:26; Job 38:4; Proverbs 8:22; John 1:1-3; Romans 1:20.

IV. ANGELS

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

I believe that angels are intelligent beings possessing great strength; are not able to reproduce their kind; have spiritual bodies; are incorruptible, immortal, and invisible; are not omnipotent, omnipresent, or omniscient; and that God created them as holy beings with the power to choose between good and evil.

I believe that a great number of the angels chose evil and plunged themselves into apostasy, torment, and damnation, and are organized totally against the plans and purposes of God.

I believe there is an actual devil, called Satan, who is the incarnation of evil, the avowed enemy of the human race, the leader of the wicked angels (demons) that fell in the beginning. Furthermore, he is the antichrist spirit, who is in the world today transforming himself into an angel of light to deceive people. He is limited in his wicked influences by the providence of God, and his end is eternal fire and brimstone in hell.

I believe people can be possessed (under complete control) by demons or oppressed (afflicted and tormented) by demons.

I believe that the holy angels are ministering spirits to the saints to:

- a. reveal God's will in special cases;
- b. preserve them from evil;
- c. convey their souls to heaven at death; and
- d. gather them together when they are raptured.

I believe that angels have revealed themselves to people in visible forms.

I stand opposed to any teaching, which states that angels are only impersonal good or evil principles or influences.

I stand opposed to angels being worshiped.

Scriptures: 1 Corinthians 15:44; Genesis 18:2; 2 Peter 2:11; Psalm 103:20; 1 Peter 1:12; Matthew 22:30; Job 38:7; Hebrews 1:14; Jude 6; 1 Timothy 3:6; Ephesians 2:2; 6:12; Matthew 18:20; 2 Peter 2:4; Matthew 25:41; Matthew 13:39;

John 8:44; Job 1; Ephesians 2:2; Revelation 20:7, 8; 2 Thessalonians 2:9, 10; 2 Corinthians 2:11; 1 Peter 5:8; 2 Samuel 14:17; Matthew 25:31; Daniel 10:13; 2 Kings 19:35; Psalm 91:10, 12; 34:7; Matthew 18:10; Luke 16:22; Revelation 19:10.

V. MANKIND

I believe that mankind in his original state was created with a threefold nature of body (which was of the dust of the earth), soul (which is our life energy), and spirit (which was created in God's image and likeness), possessing the attributes of being spiritual, social, creative, a free moral agent, rational, holy and immortal; had a complete and unbroken communion with his Creator God; was created as a finite being a little lower than the angels; and was placed in the Garden of Eden (a land of perfect happiness), to rule the earth, to reproduce their kind, and to grow in the grace and knowledge of the Lord.

I believe that Adam, as the representative of mankind, was created first; that Eve was created from a rib of Adam; and these two were the common parents of the whole human race.

I believe that when Adam fell from his original state by an act of disobedience, he died spiritually; the image of God in mankind was defaced; he became totally depraved, and plunged the whole human race into sin with all its consequences.

I believe mankind as a free moral agent, who is able to know right from wrong, can freely choose the moral path he will take.

I believe mankind is unable to save himself from sin.

I believe mankind can be restored to moral purity in this life through the blood of Jesus Christ.

I believe God has provided a complete restoration for the whole human race through the blood atonement of Jesus, which must be accepted on an individual basis.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

I stand opposed to **rationalism**, which says the rational part of man was not affected by the fall and makes reason the sole source of knowledge for actions; **gnosticism**, which says the spirit of man is an emanation from God and thus makes me a little god; and **socialism**, which denies depravity in the human race, and makes injustices within the social environment the cause of moral depravity.

Scriptures: Genesis 1-3; Psalm 8; Genesis 5:3; 6; Genesis 3:15; John 3:16; 2 Peter 3:9; Isaiah 53.

VI. SIN

I believe sin is twofold in nature, in that it is a willful transgression against a known law of God, and an inherited proneness toward evil, which corrupts the whole human nature.

I believe this corruption of human nature remains in the born-again child of God until it is eradicated by the infilling of the Holy Spirit at sanctification.

I believe the effect of sin is total depravity to the extent that without a Redeemer I would be hopelessly and eternally lost.

I believe sin is in the world because of Adam's fall and man's own willful rebellion against God.

I believe the penalty of sin is both physical and spiritual death.

I believe God's attitude toward sin is present wrath and eternal vengeance on the sinner who refuses to repent.

I believe everyone is a sinner by birth and by choice until Jesus becomes His Saviour and Lord.

I stand opposed to any teaching that denies the utter sinfulness of the whole human race.

Scriptures: Genesis 3; 5:3; 6:5; Psalm 10:2-11; 51:5; Jeremiah 17:9; Romans 3;

6:23; Ezekiel 18:20-23; John 3:36; 1 Corinthians 3:1-3.

VII. THE JEWISH NATION

I believe the Jews are God's chosen people to bring the Redeemer of mankind and His earthly kingdom into the world.

I believe the Old Testament Scriptures show God's dealings with the Jewish people.

I believe the promises God has given to the Jews are literal and will be literally fulfilled.

Scriptures: Isaiah 51:2; Deuteronomy 7:6, 7; 14:2; Exodus 19:5, 6; Deuteronomy 32:10, 11; 33:27-29; Psalm 105:13-15; Psalm 121:3-5; Genesis 49:10; Daniel 9:25; Psalm 14:7; Romans 11:26; Ezekiel 39:29; Zechariah 12:10; Romans 11:25; Hosea 3:5; Isaiah 44:22; 59:20; Jeremiah 33:8; Isaiah 44:23; 49:13; 52:8, 9; 66:10, 19; Jeremiah 3:18; Isaiah 11:15, 16; 14:1-3; 49:22, 23; 60:11, 12, 14, 19; 61:4-6; Isaiah 59:20; Zechariah 2:11; Romans 11:24.

VIII. SALVATION

I believe that Jesus Christ (Who was born of the Virgin Mary), lived a life without sin, died on a cross, was buried in a tomb, rose the third day, revealed Himself alive in a resurrected body by many infallible proofs for 40 days, ascended into heaven having obtained eternal redemption for me, and is now seated on the right hand of God the Father, interceding for me. He is perfect God and perfect man—the God-man. I believe Jesus will come again to put away wickedness and set up His kingdom upon this earth. I believe Jesus is the only provision for my eternal redemption.

I believe salvation is threefold:

a. I am saved from the guilt of sin when I repent of my sins and accept Jesus as my own personal Savior by faith.

b. I am saved from the power of sin when I fully consecrate myself to God and by faith accept the Holy Spirit as my Sanctifier after I am saved.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

c. I am saved from the effects of sin, either when I die a Christian or I am raptured into glory at the second coming of Jesus Christ.

I believe salvation is received by faith in God's finished work, which is through Jesus Christ.

I believe salvation is personal and knowable.

I believe salvation is for the whole person for time and eternity.

I believe "saved," "eternal redemption," "regeneration," "born-again," "conversion" are all expressions showing a new life through faith in the shed blood of Jesus Christ.

I believe "atonement," "justification," "reconciliation," "propitiation" are expressions showing God's mercy in forgiving my sins and freeing me from its guilt and penalty when I repent of my sins and accept Jesus as my Savior.

I believe adoption is that gracious act of God whereby I am made a child of God.

I believe eternal life is God's gift to me when I become a child of God.

I believe I receive regeneration, justification, adoption and eternal life in the first definite work of God's grace. I believe I receive the Holy Spirit at this time. I believe the original sin remains in a subdued condition in this first work of God's grace.

I believe "original sin," "selfishness," "the old man," "carnality," "the flesh," "the body of sin," "the law of sin and death," "the body of death," "the besetting sin," "the sin of the world" are all expressions of the inherited depravity of my moral nature by which I am led into sin from birth to sanctification, at which time this nature is purged out.

I believe entire sanctification is a second definite work of God's grace by which God cleanses His adopted child from the inner defilement of his human nature. I

believe when I give my life completely to God and trust Him for His cleansing, I am filled with the Holy Spirit. I believe entire sanctification brings me into a life of holy living.

I believe “holiness,” “Christian holiness,” “Christian perfection,” “perfect love,” “perfect peace,” “heart holiness,” “rest of faith” are all expressions of a life of love, which can only be lived as the Holy Spirit sheds the love of God abroad in my heart.

I believe the life of holiness is progressive in that I grow in the grace and knowledge of my Lord and Savior Jesus Christ all my Christian life.

I stand opposed to: **baptismal regeneration**, which states a person is born again into God’s family when baptized in water with the baptismal formula; **a limited atonement**, which states God has elected some to be saved and some to be lost, or that you have to fight the carnal spirit all your Christian life; **a works salvation**, which says I am saved by works or receive grace through the good works of others; and **unconditional eternal security**, which says once I am saved I never can backslide and be eternally lost in hell.

Scripture: Isaiah 7:14; Matthew 1:18-23; Hebrews 4:15; Matthew 27:50, 58-60; 28:5-10; Acts 1:3-11; 1 Corinthians 15:3-8; Hebrews 7:25; 9:12; 1 Timothy 3:16; Matthew 25:31-46; Revelation 20:11-15; John 14:6; Acts 4:12; Romans 5; 6; 1 Corinthians 15; Romans 5:1; Ephesians 2:8-10; John 3:16; Acts 15:8, 9; John 3:1-3; Romans 8:14-21; Hebrews 10:14, 15; 1 John 5:18-21; Romans 8 with 1:8; 1 Thessalonians 1 with 4:3-8; 5:23, 24; John 7:37-39; Acts 8:14-17; 19:1-7; Romans 5:5; 2 Corinthians 7:11. Galatians 2:20; 4:4-6; 5:16-26; 6:7-9, 14-16; 2 Peter 1:1-9; 3:18.

IX. THE CHRISTIAN MINISTRY

I believe in a God-inspired, God-called, and God-equipped Christian ministry.

I believe that both men and women are called into the Christian ministry to preach God’s Word and pastor a church.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

I believe the extent of the Christian ministry is for each organized church, for all cultures, for all time.

I believe the purpose of the Christian ministry is to propagate the gospel of Jesus Christ to the ends of the world, to organize new churches, and to administer the laws, sacraments, and disciplines of the church.

I believe the Christian ministry is equipped spiritually, mentally, emotionally, and socially through personal experience and training. I believe the Christian minister should know the gospel, live the gospel, be gentle to the contentious, and be apt to teach and ready to preach the gospel to others individually and collectively.

I believe only those who meet the qualifications, as set forth in 1 and 2 Timothy and Titus, should be allowed to preach or teach in the church.

I believe every Christian has a called ministry, whether it is being a good parent or pastoring a church. I believe the gifts of the Spirit are given to Christians to minister to and for the advancement of God's kingdom upon the earth through the Church of Jesus Christ my Lord and Saviour.

I stand opposed to **an unprepared ministry**, which allows one to minister without showing Biblical qualifications for it; **a liberal ministry**, which rejects the literal and authoritative nature of the Word of God; **an elite ministry**, which states only the pastor can witness for Christ and have a full understanding of the deep things of God; and **a social ministry**, which places social issues above spiritual issues and denies my need of a born-again experience within the church membership.

Scriptures: 1 and 2 Timothy; Titus; 1 Thessalonians 5:12, 13; Matthew 26:18-20; Acts 1:8; 2:17, 18; Romans 10:11-17; 1 Corinthians 12.

X. THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

I believe the true Christian Church consists of all true “called-out” followers of God in all generations who have organized themselves together to propagate the gospel of Christ to the uttermost parts of the earth.

I believe the purpose of the Christian Church is to provide Christian worship, Christian fellowship, a Christian ministry, and a Christian witness for every born-again child of God.

I believe the true Christian Church is separated from the world by the mighty working of the Holy Spirit, with the purpose of pointing the unregenerate world to a better way of life.

I believe Jesus is the head of the Church, which is the body of Christ.

I believe the power of the Christian Church is through the moral purity and inspiration it receives from the indwelling Holy Spirit.

I believe the purity of the Christian Church covers three areas:

- a. not conformed to the world,
- b. freed from the carnal nature, and
- c. not bound by evil influences of satanic powers.

I believe this purity makes the Christian Church free to follow God completely in all things.

I believe the Church has the right and obligation to discipline its members.

I believe the Church has two sacraments, baptism and the Lord’s Supper, which were instituted by Jesus for all generations.

I believe the financial needs of the Christian Church should be met by tithes and offerings.

I stand opposed to a **one church salvation**, which states I have to be a member of their church to get to heaven; a **formalized worship**, which leaves no place for

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

God to work in a church service to bring a sinner to a personal faith in Christ; **consubstantiation or transubstantiation**, which states the body and blood of Christ is with, or becomes one with the elements of the Lord's supper, respectively; **denominationalism**, which places dogma and traditions above the plain teachings of the Bible.

Scriptures: Matthew 16:18; 18:17-20; Acts 2:47; 5:11; 7:38; 14:23; 20:28; 1 Corinthians 4:17; 11:20-30; 12:28; 14:5, 33; Ephesians 5:23-32; Colossians 1:18, 24; 1 Timothy 3:5, 15, 16; Hebrews 12:23; James 5:14; Matthew 26:26-30; Luke 14:22-26; Luke 22:14-20; Matthew 28:19.

XI. THE CIVIL GOVERNMENT

I believe the laws of the civil government are instituted by God and that I am to obey them, so long as they do not violate my God-given freedoms of worshiping and witnessing for Him.

I believe the purpose of the civil government is to secure my God-given rights to life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness as stated in the Declaration of Independence, July 4, 1776.

I believe the civil government has a right to finance its constitutional obligation to its citizens through fair and representative taxation.

I believe the civil government is to administer protection and justice to its people, the Church is to minister to the spiritual needs of the people and that the two are not to interfere with each other's God-given duties.

I stand opposed to the **civil government regulating the Christian Church**; to a **State Elite Church**, which only sanctions one denomination as the Official Church that can function within its citizenship; and to **Atheistic Socialism**, which wants to remove everything that has to do with God and the Church out of my governmental and public institutions.

Scriptures: Acts 4:19, 20; 5:29; Romans 13; 1 Peter 3:22; Psalm 9:17.

XII. THE WORLD

I believe “the world” is the unregenerate segment of my society, under the control of Satan, working as a substitute for real Christianity.

I believe the Christian is to be separated from worldly pleasures (dancing, movies, drug addiction, loose living), worldly fads (religious fads, indecent dress), and worldly attitudes (rebellion, party spirit). As a Christian, I am in the world, but not a part of its ungodly system.

Scriptures: Romans 12:1, 2; 2 Corinthians 4:4; Galatians 1:4; Titus 2:12; Matthew 5:14; 16:26; John 1:10-13, 29; John 4:42; 14:17; 15:19; 16:8-11, 33; 17:14, 16, 21; Romans 3:19; 1 Corinthians 1:2; 2:12; 3:19; 5:10; Galatians 6:14; Ephesians 2:2; Philippians 2:15; 1 Timothy 1:15; James 1:27; 4:4; 2 Peter 1:4; 2:20; 1 John 2:15-17; 3:1; 5:4, 5, 19; Revelation 11:15; Deuteronomy 22:5; 1 Timothy 2:9, 10; 1 Peter 3:3, 4.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

STEP 3

**A Call to General Repentance
God's Operation Manual For Spiritual Warfare**

**UNDERSTANDING THE TIMES AND SEASONS
FOR GREATER PREPAREDNESS
FOR SPIRITUAL WARFARE**

A CALL TO GENERAL REPENTANCE

Whereas: Our nation has forsaken the Faith of its Fathers.
Whereas: The good laws of our land are forsaken.
Whereas: Evil men and women are triumphing over good.
Whereas: Lawlessness is ruling supreme in our land.
Whereas: Hatred is being advanced as loving service.
Whereas: Innocent people are being murdered.
Whereas: Judges are the number one lawbreakers.
Whereas: Our government is not protecting the innocent.
Whereas: God's righteous laws are ignored.
Whereas: Good is called evil and evil is called good.
Whereas: The counsel of the righteous is being scoffed at.
Whereas: Wicked foreign laws are being used in our courts.
Whereas: Our enemies are being comforted by tyrants.
Whereas: Our constitutional rights are being transgressed.
Whereas: Perversion is paraded before us as being normal.
Whereas: Our enemies are being allowed to destroy us.
Whereas: Several spiritual leaders have joined our enemies.
Whereas: Wicked people are not being judged or restrained.
Whereas: Communism has replaced our Christian republic.
Whereas: Our enemies have taken over our schools.
Whereas: Our medias have become propaganda rings.
Whereas: There is a growing hatred against Jesus Christ.
Whereas: Man's wicked laws are replacing God's laws.
Whereas: All nations that forsake God are hell-bound.
Whereas: Godless evolution is replacing special creation.
Whereas: God-haters are allowed to make our laws.
Whereas: Our leaders are surrendering to our enemies.
Whereas: Our families are being attacked by our enemies.
Whereas: Innocent blood is shed in abortion clinics.
Whereas: Good people are being pictured as villains.
Whereas: God has left us because we have forsaken Him.
Whereas: Our only hope is for us to turn back to God.
Whereas: God will hear and heal us if we repent of our sins!

The foregoing facts being the true picture of our national apostasy with God's

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

willingness to forgive us, compels upon us to resolve the following call to national repentance!

Resolved that all Jesus' Church members do the following to enlist in spiritual warfare to bring glory and honor to God!

Our Spiritual Warfare Enlistment is urgent! Time is running out! In preparing for spiritual warfare, let us do the following:

1. Take personal responsibility for our own spiritual condition.
2. Do not worry about what others will say or do.
3. Read Jeremiah 29:10-14 with me and enlist yourself into God's army as we stand on His promises together.

“For thus says the Lord, ‘That after seventy years be accomplished at Babylon I will visit you, and perform My good Word toward you, in causing you to return to this place. For I know the thoughts that I think toward you,’ says the Lord, ‘thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end. Then shall you call upon Me, and you shall go and pray unto Me, and I will hearken unto you. And you shall seek Me, and find Me, when you shall search for Me with all your heart. And I will be found of you,’ says the Lord: ‘and I will turn away your captivity, and I will gather you from all the nations, and from all the places whither I have driven you,’ said the Lord; ‘and I will bring you again into the place whence I caused you to be carried away captive’” (Jeremiah 29:10-14 ET).

Are you ready to enlist yourself for the spiritual battle?

Resolved, that as God has expressed His love to us, we the members of His Church, will willingly enter into His army!

To enlist in God's army, do the following in this order!

- Repent** of your rebellion against God!
- Return** to the Faith of your Fathers!
- Renew** your commitment to God and His righteousness!
- Restore** what you have taken from yourself and others!
- Refresh** yourself in Jesus Christ's love and grace!

I am resolved to repent of my rebellion against God!

“He that covers his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesses and forsakes them shall have mercy” (Proverbs 28:13 ET).

“If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness” (1 John 1:9 ET).

I am resolved to return to the Faith of my Fathers!

“And the Lord said unto Jacob, “Return unto the land of your fathers, and to your kindred; and I will be with you” (Genesis 31:3 ET).

“And I will give them an heart to know Me, that I am the Lord: and they shall be My people, and I will be their God: for they shall return unto Me with their whole heart” (Jeremiah 24:7 ET).

I am resolved to renew my commitment to God and His righteousness!

“Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me” (Psalm 51:10 KJV).

“But they that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint” (Isaiah 40:31 KJV). See also Romans 12:1, 2; 2 Corinthians 4:16-18.

I am resolved to restore that which I have taken from others and myself!

Leviticus 6:1-5

“Restore unto me the joy of Your salvation; and uphold me with Your free spirit” (Psalm 51:12).

I am resolved to refresh myself in Jesus Christ’s love and grace!

(Psalm 103:1-5).

Resolved, that seeing I am in a world that does not accept God’s rule over them, I will “obey God rather than man!”

Resolved, that our world, being in rebellion against the true and living God, I will use all non-violent means to call them to repentance toward God and faith in my Lord Jesus Christ!

Resolved, that realizing the seriousness of our spiritual warfare, I will network with my fellow Christian warriors!

Resolved, that I will conduct my life according to “God’s Operation Manual for Spiritual Warfare!”

GOD'S OPERATION MANUAL FOR SPIRITUAL WARFARE

Terms of Peace

1. You will quit corrupting our youth.
2. You will quit controlling our media.
3. You will quit dumbing down our churches.
4. You will quit inciting us to fight one other.
5. You will quit bankrupting our government.
6. You will quit censoring us when we disagree with you.
7. You will quit destroying our national values.
8. You will quit attacking our gun ownership rights.
9. You will quit undermining our Armed Forces.
10. You will quit making us your slaves.
11. You will quit destroying our economy.
12. You will quit trashing our national governing documents.
13. You will quit destroying our family values.
14. You will quit murdering our babies in the womb.

Activities of this nature will be considered acts of aggression against us and will be responded to accordingly.

We will settle for nothing less than a **total surrender** of all activities that have been used against us.

I. The Warrior's Code of Ethics

“If any man come to Me, and hate (loves less) not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brothers, and sisters, yes, and his own life also, he cannot be My disciple. And whosoever does not bear his cross, and come after Me, cannot be My disciple. For which of you, intending to build a tower, sits not down first, and counts the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it? Lest haply, after he has laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it begin to mock him, saying, ‘This man began to build, and was not able to finish.’ Or what king, going to make war against another king, sits not down first, and consults whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that comes against him with

twenty thousand? Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sends an ambassage, and desires conditions of peace. So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsakes not all that he has he cannot be my disciple. Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his savor, wherewith shall it be seasoned? It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill; but men cast it out. He that has ears to hear, let him hear” (Luke 14:26-35 ET).

Realizing the need of a Christian witness in this world:

†I will trust and obey my Lord and Savior Jesus Christ at all times and in all places.

†I will keep myself fit as a soldier of Jesus Christ by developing a loving, personal relationship with God and His Church.

†I will keep myself fit for Christian service by studying my Bible and giving myself to prayer.

†I will wear my battle armor at all times with a readiness to fight when called upon to do so.

As a soldier of Jesus Christ:

†I will always keep informed on world and spiritual conditions by studying the history and accurate news of world events, both secular and sacred.

†I am willing to suffer the loss of all things, including but not limited to, life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness, for the sake of Jesus and His kingdom.

There are two resources on the Internet as follows: The “**Avalon Project**” at the Yale Law School at <http://www.yale.edu/lawweb/avalon/> and “**The Constitution**” at <http://www.constitution.org> that serves to help you inform yourself of our national history.

Contrasting Military Service With Christian Service!

U. S. Military Code of Conduct With a Christian Warrior’s Code of Conduct

Article 1 - “I am an American, fighting in the forces which guard my country and our way of life, I am prepared to give my life in their defense.”

I am a Christian, waging spiritual warfare for the good of my world and the Christian way of life. I am prepared to die for God and others for the defense of

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

the gospel of Jesus Christ.

Article II - “I will never surrender of my own free will. If in command, I will never surrender the members of my command while they still have the means to resist.”

I will never surrender my Christian faith by my own free will. If a leader of Jesus’ Church, I will never forsake my flock to the enemy as long as we have life and means to resist.

Article III - “If I am captured I will continue to resist by all means available, I will make every effort to escape and to aid others to escape. I will accept neither parole nor special favors from the enemy.”

If I am persecuted for my Christian faith I will do all I can to escape. If my fellow Christians are with me, I will make every effort to help them escape. I will never take favors from the enemies of Jesus to escape discomforts received for the sake of the Cross of Jesus.

Article IV - “If I become a prisoner of war, I will keep faith with my fellow prisoners. I will give no information or take part in any action which might be harmful to my comrades. If I am senior, I will take command. If not, I will obey the lawful orders of those appointed over me and will back them up in every way.”

If I am taken prisoner while waging this war, I will do all in my power to encourage my fellow Christians to keep the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ. I will do nothing that will bring harm to my brothers and sisters in the Lord. If I am a spiritual leader, I will take charge of the situation. If not, I will follow the leadership of those God has placed in charge.

Article V - “When questioned, should I become a prisoner of war, I am required to give name, rank, service number, and date of birth. I will evade answering further questions to the utmost of my ability. I will make no oral or written statements disloyal to my country and its allies or harmful to their cause.”

I will not give the devil and his people any advantages that will bring a disgrace or harm to the cause of Jesus Christ. I will do all in my power to call my enemies to repentance and faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. I will not be intimidated by ungodly, wicked people. I will stay faithful to the Lord and my fellow Christians

at all costs.

Article VI - "I will never forget that I am an American, fighting for freedom, responsible for my actions, and dedicated to the principles which made my country free. I will trust in my God and in the United States of America."

I will never forget that I am a soldier of the Lord Jesus Christ, fighting to free our world of ungodliness and rebellion against God. Some day I know I am to give an account to the true and living God for every idle word I have spoken. Thus, without conservation or reservation, I am giving myself to the advancement of God's eternal kingdom throughout the world. I will trust and obey my God and those He has called to shepherd me.

II. The War Well-Defined

"From whence come wars and fightings among you? Come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members? You lust, and have not: you kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: you fight and war, yet you have not, because you ask not. You ask, and receive not, because you ask amiss, that you may consume it upon your lusts. You adulterers and adulteresses, know you not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God. Do you think that the scripture said in vain, 'The spirit that dwells in us lusts to envy?' But He gives more grace. Wherefore He said, "God resists the proud, but gives grace unto the humble. Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. Draw near to God, and He will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners; and purify your hearts, you double-minded. Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness. Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He shall lift you up. Speak not evil one of another, brothers. He that speaks evil of his brother, and judges his brother, speaks evil of the law, and judges the law: but if you judge the law, you are not a doer of the law, but a judge" (James 4:1-11 ET).

"For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places" (Ephesians 6:12 KJV).

"Why do the heathen rage and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

against His Anointed, saying, ‘Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us’” (Psalm 2:1-3 ET).

The greatest war is the war that is in our hearts as our carnal nature rebels against God. Then, once this battle is won by accepting Jesus as our Savior and Lord, we enter into a battle against the forces of evil, both satanic and man’s rebellion against God and His people.

III. The Enemy Uncovered

“For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death. But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter. What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, ‘You shall not covet.’ But sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead. For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died. And the commandment, which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death. For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me. Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good. Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful. For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin. For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good. Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwells in me. For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwells no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwells in me. I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. O wretched man that I am! Who shall deliver me from the body of this death?” (Romans 7:5-24 ET).

“Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery,

fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God” (Galatians 5:19-21 KJV).

“For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God” (Romans 8:5-8 KJV).

“And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven. And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world” (Revelation 13:6-8 KJV).

The Bible is clear as to the identity of the enemy. The enemy is the devil. He has set up his organization of rebellion against the true and living God in the hearts and organizations of mankind. He is determined to rule in the affairs of this world. He is working night and day to dethrone God and enslave the whole human race.

IV. The Warrior's Identity

A saint of God

A lively stone in God's Building

A branch of the True Vine

A sheep in the Good Shepherd's fold

A member of the Body of Christ

A faithful member in the fellowship of believers

A chosen generation

A peculiar people

The bride of Christ

A royal priesthood

A holy nation

A warrior in the army for God

A minister of reconciliation

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

An ambassador for Christ
A Christ-like example
An overseer of the flock of God
One of the redeemed of all ages
A born-again, Spirit-filled Christian
A preacher of the Word of God
A true witness for Jesus Christ
A servant of God
A member of the Church of Jesus Christ

V. The Ultimate Weapons

“I am debtor both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians; both to the wise, and to the unwise. So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also. For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believes; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, ‘The just shall live by faith’” (Romans 1:14-17 ET).

“Behold, what manner of love the Father has bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knows us not, because it knew Him not. Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it does not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is. And every man that has this hope in Him purifies himself, even as He is pure. Whosoever commits sin transgresses also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law. And you know that He was manifested to take away our sins; and in Him is no sin. Whosoever abides in him sins not: whosoever sins has not seen Him, neither known Him. Little children, let no man deceive you: he that does righteousness is righteous, even as He is righteous. He that commits sin is of the devil; for the devil sins from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil. Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for His seed remains in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God (1 John 3:1-9 ET).

Our ultimate weapon is the gospel of Jesus Christ. Seeing Jesus Christ is the gospel, thus, we preach, teach and exhort everyone, everywhere to accept Jesus as their Lord and Savior. This weapon destroys the works of the devil completely.

VI. The Warrior's Ammunition

The Bible is our sword. To understand the teachings of the Bible more fully I have placed some chapters that cover various topics for your study. Also, I have enclosed one of my sermons on "Bearing Up Under Persecution" for your edification. Feel free to use anything in this book you can for the advancement of Jesus Christ and His kingdom!

A. Know Your Weapon - The Sword of God

1. The Application of the Word of God - Psalm 119 revisited Go to Step 2, Chapter 4 in this book to revisit Psalm 119.

2. The Special Creation Edge

"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, 'Let there be light: and there was light.' And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day.

"And God said, 'Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters.' And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day.

"And God said, 'Let the waters under the Heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear:' and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas: and God saw that it was good. And God said, 'Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so.' And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the third day.

"And God said, 'Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

years: And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth:’ and it was so. And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth, And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

“And God said, ‘Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that has life, and fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven.’ And God created great whales, and every living creature that moves, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, ‘Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let fowl multiply in the earth.’ And the evening and the morning were the fifth day.

“And God said, ‘Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind:’ and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creeps upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And God said, ‘Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps upon the earth.’ So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, ‘Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moves upon the earth. And God said, ‘Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for food. And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creeps upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for food:’ and it was so. And God saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day” (Genesis 1 ET).

3. Speak the Truth in Love Edge

“Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all

faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing. And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profits me nothing. Charity suffers long, and is kind; charity envies not; charity vaunts not itself, is not puffed up, does not behave itself unseemly, seeks not her own, is not easily provoked, thinks no evil; rejoices not in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth, bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Charity never fails: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away. For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away. When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known. And now abides faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity” (1 Corinthians 13 ET). (Note: charity means love.)

4. Advancing Freedom From Sin Edge

“What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of His death, we shall be also in the likeness of His resurrection: knowing this, that our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. For he that is dead is freed from sin. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him: knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dies no more; death has no more dominion over Him. For in that He died, He died unto sin once: but in that He lives, He lives unto God. Likewise reckon you also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that you should obey it in the lusts thereof. Neither yield you your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. For sin shall not have dominion over you: for you are not

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

under the law, but under grace. What then? Shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid. Know you not, that to whom you yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants you are to whom you obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness? But God be thanked, that you were the servants of sin, but you have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you. Being then made free from sin, you became the servants of righteousness. I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as you have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness. For when you were the servants of sin, you were free from righteousness. What fruit had you then in those things whereof you are now ashamed? For the end of those things is death. But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, you have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord” (Romans 6 ET).

5. Explanation of Christian Liberty Edge

“There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. But you are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of His. And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. But if the Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwells in you. Therefore, brothers, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. For if you live after the flesh, you shall die: but if you through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, you shall live. For as many as are led by the Spirit

of God, they are the sons of God. For you have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but you have received the Spirit if you through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, you shall live. For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. For you have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but you have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: and if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together. For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us. For the earnest expectation of the creature waits for the manifestation of the sons of God. For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of Him who has subjected the same in hope, Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groans and travails in pain together until now. And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body. For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man sees, why doth he yet hope for? But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it. Likewise the Spirit also helps our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit Himself makes intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. And He that searches the hearts knows what is the mind of the Spirit, because He makes intercession for the saints according to the will of God. And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. For whom He did foreknow, He also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brothers. Moreover whom He did predestinate, them He also called: and whom He called, them He also justified: and whom He justified, them He also glorified. What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us? He that spared not His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things? Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifies. Who is he that condemns? It is Christ that died, yes rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, Who also makes intercession for us. Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written, "For

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Your sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. No, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him that loved us. For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord” (Romans 8 ET).

6. Outline for Transformed Commitment Edge

“I beseech you therefore, brothers, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be you transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God has dealt to every man the measure of faith. For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: so we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; or ministry, let us wait on our ministering: or he that teaches, on teaching; or he that exhorts, on exhortation: he that gives, let him do it with simplicity; he that rules, with diligence; he that shows mercy, with cheerfulness. Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good. Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honor preferring one another; not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord; rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer; distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality. Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not. Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep. Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits. Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men. If it be possible, as much as lies in you, live peaceably with all men. Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, ‘Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.’ Therefore if your enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing you shall heap coals of fire on his head. Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good” (Romans 12 ET).

7. Faith Exemplified Edge

“Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. For by it the elders obtained a good report. Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear. By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaks. By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear. By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaks. By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God. But without faith it is impossible to please Him: for he that comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him. By faith Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith. By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise: for he looked for a city which has foundations, whose builder and maker is God. Through faith also Sara herself received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged Him faithful Who had promised. Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable. These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned. But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for He has prepared for them a city. By faith Abraham, when he

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, Of whom it was said, 'That in Isaac shall your seed be called:' accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure. By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come. By faith Jacob, when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph; and worshiped, leaning upon the top of his staff. By faith Joseph, when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel; and gave commandment concerning his bones. By faith Moses, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child; and they were not afraid of the king's commandment. By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompense of the reward. By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing Him Who is invisible. Through faith he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest He that destroyed the firstborn should touch them. By faith they passed through the Red sea as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to do were drowned. By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven days. By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace. And what shall I more say? For the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae; of David also, and Samuel, and of the prophets: who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions. Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens. Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection: and others had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment: they were stoned, they were sawed asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented; (Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth. And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise: God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect" (Hebrew 11 ET).

8. Explanation of the Bodily Resurrection Edge

“Moreover, brothers, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also you have received, and wherein you stand; by which also you are saved, if you keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless you have believed in vain. For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; and that He was buried, and that He rose again the third day according to the scriptures: and that He was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: after that, He was seen of above five hundred brothers at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

After that, He was seen of James; then of all the apostles. And last of all He was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time. For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God. But by the grace of God I am what I am: and His grace which was bestowed upon me was not in vain; but I labored more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me. Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so you believed. Now if Christ be preached that He rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead? But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen: and if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain. Yes, and we are found false witnesses of God; because we have testified of God that He raised up Christ: whom He raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not. For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised: and if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; you are yet in your sins. Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished. If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable. But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first-fruits of them that slept. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. But every man in his own order: Christ the first-fruits; afterward they that are Christ's at His coming. Then comes the end, when He shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when He shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. For He must reign, till He has put all enemies under His feet. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. For He has put all things under His feet. But when He said, all things are put under Him, it is manifest that He is excepted, which did put all things under Him. And when all things shall be subdued unto Him, then shall the

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Son also Himself be subject unto Him that put all things under Him, that God may be all in all. Else what shall they do which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? Why are they then baptized for the dead? And why stand we in jeopardy every hour? I protest by your rejoicing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily. If after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantages it me, if the dead rise not? Let us eat and drink; for to morrow we die. Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners. Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame. But some man will say, 'How are the dead raised up? And with what body do they come?' You fool, that which you sow is not quickened, except it die: and that which you sow, you sow not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain: but God gives it a body as it has pleased Him, and to every seed his own body. All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds. There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another. There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differs from another star in glory. So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: it is sown in dishonor; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: it is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. And so it is written, 'The first man Adam was made a living soul;' the last Adam was made a quickening spirit. Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second Man is the Lord from heaven. As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. Now this I say, brothers, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither does corruption inherit incorruption. Behold, I show you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, 'Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is your sting? O grave, where is your

victory?" The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my beloved brothers, be you steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labor is not in vain in the Lord" (1 Corinthians 15 ET).

9. The Good Shepherd's Psalm Edge

"The Lord is my Shepherd; I shall not want. He makes me to lie down in green pastures: He leads me beside the still waters. He restores my soul: He leads me in the paths of righteousness for His name's sake. Yes, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for You are with me; Your rod and Your staff they comfort me. You prepare a table before me in the presence of my enemies: You anoint my head with oil; my cup Runs over. Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the Lord for ever" (Psalm 23 ET).

B. Sermons from the New Testament

1. Jesus' Sermon on the Mount

And seeing the multitudes, He went up into a mountain: and when He was set, His disciples came unto Him: and He opened His mouth, and taught them, saying, "Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are you, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

You are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savor, wherewith shall it

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. You are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it gives light unto all that are in the house.

Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, you shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

You have heard that it was said by them of old time, 'You shall not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment:' but I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, 'Raca,' shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, 'You fool,' shall be in danger of hell fire. Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar, and there remember that your brother has ought against you; leave there your gift before the altar, and go your way; first be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift. Agree with your adversary quickly, whiles you are in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver you to the judge, and the judge deliver you to the officer, and you be cast into prison. Verily I say unto you, You shall by no means come out thence, till you have paid the uttermost farthing.

You have heard that it was said by them of old time, 'You shall not commit adultery:' but I say unto you, That whosoever looks on a woman to lust after her has committed adultery with her already in his heart. And if your right eye offend you, pluck it out, and cast it from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish, and not that your whole body should be cast into hell. And if your right hand offend you, cut it off, and cast it from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish, and not that your whole body should be cast into hell. It has been said, 'Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement:' but I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causes her

to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced commits adultery.

Again, you have heard that it has been said by them of old time, 'You shall not forswear yourself, but shall perform unto the Lord your oaths:' but I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. Neither shall you swear by your head, because you cannot make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yes, yes; No, no: for whatsoever is more than these comes of evil.

You have heard that it has been said, 'An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth:' but I say unto you, That you resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite you on your right cheek, turn to him the other also. And if any man will sue you at the law, and take away your coat, let him have your cloak also. And whosoever shall compel you to go a mile, go with him two. Give to him that asks you, and from him that would borrow of you turn not you away.

You have heard that it has been said, 'You shall love your neighbor, and hate your enemy.' But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; that you may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for He makes His sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust. For if you love them which love you, what reward have you? Do not even the publicans the same? And if you salute your brothers only, what do you more than others? Do not even the publicans so? Be you therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect" (Matthew 5 ET).

"Take heed that you do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise you have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. Therefore when you do your alms, do not sound a trumpet before you, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But when you do alms, let not your left hand know what your right hand do: that your alms may be in secret: and your Father which sees in secret Himself shall reward you openly.

And when you pray, you shall not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But you, when you pray, enter into your closet, and when you have shut your door, pray to your Father which is in secret; and your Father which sees in secret shall reward you openly.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

But when you pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not you therefore like unto them: for your Father knows what things you have need of, before you ask Him. After this manner therefore pray you: 'Our Father which are in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. Your kingdom come. Your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For Yours is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen'. For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: but if you forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Moreover when you fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But you, when you fast, anoint your head, and wash your face; that you appear not unto men to fast, but unto your Father which is in secret: and your Father, which sees in secret, shall reward you openly.

Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust does corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust does corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. The light of the body is the eye: if therefore your eye be single, your whole body shall be full of light. But if your eye be evil, your whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you be darkness, how great is that darkness! No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. you cannot serve God and mammon. Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what you shall eat, or what you shall drink; nor yet for your body, what you shall put on. Is not the life more than food, and the body than raiment? Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not much better than they? Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature? And why take you thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin: and yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O you of little faith? Therefore take no thought, saying, 'What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? Or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed?' (For after all these

things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knows that you have need of all these things. But seek you first the kingdom of God, and His righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof" (Matthew 6 ET).

"Judge not, that you be not judged. For with what judgment you judge, you shall be judged: and with what measure you mete, it shall be measured to you again. And why behold you the mote that is in your brother's eye, but consider not the beam that is in your own eye? Or how will you say to your brother, 'Let me pull out the mote out of your eye;' and, behold, a beam is in your own eye? You hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of your own eye; and then shall you see clearly to cast out the mote out of your brother's eye.

Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast you your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.

Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: for every one that asks receives; and he that seeks finds; and to him that knocks it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask Him? Therefore all things whatsoever you would that men should do to you, do you even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

Enter you in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leads to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leads unto life, and few there be that find it.

Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. You shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree brings forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree brings forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that brings not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits you shall know them.

Not every one that says unto me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name? And in Your name have cast out devils? And in Your name done many wonderful works?'

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity.

Therefore whosoever hears these sayings of mine, and does them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that hears these sayings of mine, and does them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.”

And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at His doctrine: for He taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes” (Matthew 7 ET).

2. Peter’s Sermon on the Day of Pentecost

But Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice, and said unto them, “You men of Judea, and all you that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words: for these are not drunken, as you suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day. But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel; ‘And it shall come to pass in the last days,’ said God, ‘I will pour out of My Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams: And on My servants and on My handmaidens I will pour out in those days of My Spirit; and they shall prophesy: and I will show wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath; blood, and fire, and vapor of smoke: the sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come: and it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved.’ You men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by Him in the midst of you, as you yourselves also know: Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, you have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain: Whom God has raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that He should be holden of it. For David speaks concerning him, ‘I foresaw the Lord always before my face, for He is on my right hand, that I should not be moved: therefore did my heart rejoice, and my tongue was glad; moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope: because You

will not leave my soul in hell, neither will You suffer Your Holy One to see corruption. You have made known to me the ways of life; You shall make me full of joy with Your countenance.' Men and brothers, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, He would raise up Christ to sit on His throne; he seeing this before spoke of the resurrection of Christ, that His soul was not left in hell, neither His flesh did see corruption. This Jesus has God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses. Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the Promise of the Holy Spirit, He has shed forth this, which you now see and hear. For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he said himself, 'The Lord said unto My Lord, Sit You on My right hand, until I make Your foes Your footstool.' Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God has made that same Jesus, whom you have crucified, both Lord and Christ."

Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, "Men and brothers, what shall we do?" Then Peter said unto them, "Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call." And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying, "Save yourselves from this untoward generation" (Acts 2:14-40 ET).

3. Peter's Sermon After the Healing of the Lame Man

And when Peter saw it, he answered unto the people,
"You men of Israel, why marvel you at this? Or why look you so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or holiness we had made this man to walk? The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, has glorified His Son Jesus; Whom you delivered up, and denied Him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let Him go. But you denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you; and killed the Prince of life, whom God has raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses. And His name through faith in His name has made this man strong, whom you see and know: yes, the faith which is by him has given him this perfect soundness in the presence of you

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

all. And now, brothers, I wot that through ignorance you did it, as did also your rulers. But those things, which God before had showed by the mouth of all His prophets, that Christ should suffer, He has so fulfilled.

Repent you therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord. And He shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God has spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began. For Moses truly said unto the fathers, ‘A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brothers, like unto me; Him shall you hear in all things whatsoever He shall say unto you. And it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.’ Yes, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days. You are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, ‘And in your seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed.’ Unto you first God, having raised up His Son Jesus, sent Him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities” (Acts 3:12-26 ET).

4. Stephen’s Sermon to Jewish Leaders Stephen Was the First Christian Martyr

And he said, “Men, brothers, and fathers, hearken; The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran, and said unto him, ‘Get you out of your country, and from your kindred, and come into the land which I shall show You.’ Then came he out of the land of the Chaldaeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when his father was dead, he removed him into this land, wherein you now dwell. And he gave him none inheritance in it, no, not so much as to set his foot on: yet He promised that He would give it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no child. And God spoke on this wise, ‘That his seed should sojourn in a strange land; and that they should bring them into bondage, and entreat them evil four hundred years. And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage will I judge,’ said God: ‘and after that shall they come forth, and serve me in this place.’ And He gave him the covenant of circumcision: and so Abraham begot Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day; and Isaac begot Jacob; and Jacob begot the

twelve patriarchs. And the patriarchs, moved with envy, sold Joseph into Egypt: but God was with him, and delivered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favor and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt; and He made him governor over Egypt and all his house. Now there came a dearth over all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, and great affliction: and our fathers found no sustenance. But when Jacob heard that there was corn in Egypt, he sent out our fathers first. And at the second time Joseph was made known to his brothers; and Joseph's kindred was made known unto Pharaoh. Then sent Joseph, and called his father Jacob to him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen souls (75). So Jacob went down into Egypt, and died, he, and our fathers, and were carried over into Sychem, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a sum of money of the sons of Emmor the father of Sychem. But when the time of the promise drew nigh, which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt, till another king arose, which knew not Joseph. The same dealt subtilly with our kindred, and evil entreated our fathers, so that they cast out their young children, to the end they might not live. In which time Moses was born, and was exceeding fair, and nourished up in his father's house three months: and when he was cast out, Pharaoh's daughter took him up, and nourished him for her own son. And Moses was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in deeds. And when he was full forty years old, it came into his heart to visit his brothers the children of Israel. And seeing one of them suffer wrong, he defended him, and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian: for he supposed his brothers would have understood how that God by his hand would deliver them: but they understood not. And the next day he showed himself unto them as they strove, and would have set them at one again, saying, 'Sirs, you are brothers; why do you wrong one to another?' But he that did his neighbor wrong thrust him away, saying, 'Who made You a ruler and a judge over us? Will you kill me, as you did the Egyptian yesterday?' Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begot two sons. And when forty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of mount Sina an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush. When Moses saw it, he wondered at the sight: and as he drew near to behold it, the voice of the Lord came unto him, saying, 'I am the God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.' Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold. Then said the Lord to him, 'Put off your shoes from your feet: for the place where you stand is holy ground. I have seen, I have seen the affliction of My people which is in

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Egypt, and I have heard their groaning, and am come down to deliver them. And now come, I will send you into Egypt.’ This Moses whom they refused, saying, ‘Who made you a ruler and a judge?’ the same did God send to be a ruler and a deliverer by the hand of the angel which appeared to him in the bush. He brought them out, after that He had showed wonders and signs in the land of Egypt, and in the Red sea, and in the wilderness forty years.

This is that Moses, which said unto the children of Israel, ‘A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brothers, like unto me; Him shall you hear.’ This is he, that was in the church in the wilderness with the angel which spoke to him in the mount Sina, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us: to whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust him from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt, saying unto Aaron, ‘Make us gods to go before us: for as for this Moses, which brought us out of the land of Egypt, we do not what is become of him.’ And they made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their own hands. Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven; as it is written in the book of the prophets, ‘O you house of Israel, have you offered to me slain beasts and sacrifices by the space of forty years in the wilderness? Yes, you took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which you made to worship them: and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.’ Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as He had appointed, speaking unto Moses, that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seen. Which also our fathers that came after brought in with Joshua into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drove out before the face of our fathers, unto the days of David; who found favor before God, and desired o find a tabernacle for the God of Jacob. But Solomon built Him an house. Howbeit the most High dwells not in temples made with hands; as said the prophet, ‘Heaven is My throne, and earth is My footstool: what house will you build Me?’ said the Lord: ‘or what is the place of My rest? Has not My hand made all these things?’

You stiff-necked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, you do always resist the Holy Spirit: as your fathers did, so do you. Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? And they have slain them which showed before of the coming of the Just One; of Whom you have been now the betrayers and murderers: who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it.”

When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth. But he, being full of the Holy Spirit, looked up steadfastly

into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, and said, "Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God." Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord, and cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul. And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit." And he knelt down, and cried with a loud voice, "Lord, lay not this sin to their charge." And when he had said this, he fell asleep (Acts 7:2-60 ET).

5. Peter Preaches to Cornelius's Household and Friends

Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, "Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: but in every nation He that fears Him, and works righteousness, is accepted with Him. The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ: (He is Lord of all:) that word, I say, you know, which was published throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached; how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with Him. And we are witnesses of all things which He did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they slew and hanged on a tree: Him God raised up the third day, and showed Him openly; not to all the people, but unto witnesses chosen before of God, even to us, who did eat and drink with Him after He rose from the dead. And He commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is He which was ordained of God to be the Judge of quick and dead. To him give all the prophets witness, that through His name whosoever believes in Him shall receive remission of sins."

While Peter yet spoke these words, the Holy Spirit fell on all them which heard the word (Acts 10:34-44 ET).

6. Paul's Sermon to the Jews

But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and sat down. And after the reading of the law and the prophets the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, you men and brothers, if you have any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Then Paul stood up, and beckoning with his hand said, “Men of Israel, and you that fear God, give audience. The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with an high arm brought He them out of it. And about the time of forty years suffered He their manners in the wilderness. And when He had destroyed seven nations in the land of Chanaan, He divided their land to them by lot. And after that He gave unto them judges about the space of four hundred and fifty years, until Samuel the prophet. And afterward they desired a king: and God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty years. And when He had removed him, He raised up unto them David to be their king; to whom also He gave testimony, and said, ‘I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after My own heart, which shall fulfill all My will.’ Of this man’s seed has God according to His promise raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus: when John had first preached before His coming the baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel. And as John fulfilled his course, he said, ‘Whom think you that I am? I am not He. But, behold, there comes one after me, whose shoes of His feet I am not worthy to loose.’ Men and brothers, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you fears God, to you is the word of this salvation sent. For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew Him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets which are read every sabbath day, they have fulfilled them in condemning Him. And though they found no cause of death in Him, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slain. And when they had fulfilled all that was written of Him, they took Him down from the tree, and laid Him in a sepulchre. But God raised Him from the dead: and He was seen many days of them which came up with Him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are His witnesses unto the people. And we declare unto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made unto the fathers, God has fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that He has raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, ‘You are my Son, this day have I begotten You.’ And as concerning that He raised Him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, He said on this wise, ‘I will give you the sure mercies of David.’ Wherefore He said also in another psalm, ‘You shall not suffer Your Holy One to see corruption.’ For David, after he had served his own generation by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption: but He, Whom God raised again, saw no corruption.

Be it known unto you therefore, men and brothers, that through this Man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins: and by Him all that believe are justified

from all things, from which you could not be justified by the law of Moses. Beware therefore, lest that come upon you, which is spoken of in the prophets; Behold, you despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which you shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.”

And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them the next sabbath. Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews and religious proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas: who, speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the grace of God.

And the next sabbath day came almost the whole city together to hear the word of God. But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spoke against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming. Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, “It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing you put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles. For so has the Lord commanded us, saying, ‘I have set You to be a light of the Gentiles, that You should be for salvation unto the ends of the earth.’ “ And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed. And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region. But the Jews stirred up the devout and honorable women, and the chief men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts. But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came unto Iconium. And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the Holy Spirit (Acts 13:14-52 ET).

7. Paul on Mars Hill

Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountered him. And some said, “What will this babbler say? He seems to be a setter forth of strange gods:” because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection. And they took him, and brought him unto Areopagus, saying, “May we know what this new doctrine whereof you speak is? For you bring certain strange things to our ears: we would know therefore what these things mean.” (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new thing.)

Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars’ hill, and said, “You men of Athens, I

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

perceive that in all things you are too superstitious. For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, 'TO THE UNKNOWN GOD.' Whom therefore you ignorantly worship, Him declare I unto you.

God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that He is Lord of heaven and earth, dwells not in temples made with hands; neither is worshiped with men's hands, as though He needed any thing, seeing He gives to all life, and breath, and all things; and has made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and has determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; that they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after Him, and find Him, though He be not far from every one of us: for in Him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, 'For we are also his offspring.' Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commands all men every where to repent: because He has appointed a day, in the which He will judge the world in righteousness by that Man Whom He has ordained; whereof He has given assurance unto all men, in that He has raised Him from the dead."

And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, "We will hear You again of this matter." So Paul departed from among them. Howbeit certain men clave unto him, and believed: among the which was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them (Acts 17:18-34 ET).

C. Prayers From the New Testament

1. The Disciples Model Prayer

After this manner therefore pray you: Our Father which is in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. Your kingdom come. Your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For Yours is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen (Matthew 6:9-13 ET).

2. The Lord Jesus Christ's High Priestly Prayer

These words spoke Jesus, and lifted up His eyes to heaven, and said, “Father, the hour is come; glorify Your Son, that Your Son also may glorify You: as You have given Him power over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as You have given Him. And this is life eternal, that they might know You the only true God, and Jesus Christ, Whom You have sent. I have glorified You on the earth: I have finished the work which You gave Me to do. And now, O Father, glorify You Me with your own self with the glory which I had with You before the world was. I have manifested Your name unto the men which You gave me out of the world: yours they were, and You gave them Me; and they have kept Your word. Now they have known that all things whatsoever You have given Me are of You. For I have given unto them the words which You gave Me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from You, and they have believed that You did send me. I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which You have given Me; for they are Yours. And all Mine are yours, and yours are Mine; and I am glorified in them. And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to You. Holy Father, keep through your own name those whom You have given Me, that they may be one, as We are. While I was with them in the world, I kept them in Your name: those that You gave Me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. And now come I to You; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have My joy fulfilled in themselves. I have given them Your word; and the world has hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that You should take them out of the world, but that You should keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through Your truth: Your word is truth. As You have sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on Me through their word; that they all may be one; as You, Father, are in me, and I in You, that they also may be one in Us: that the world may believe that You have sent Me. And the glory which You gave me I have given them; that they may be one, even as We are one: I in them, and You in Me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and have loved them, as You have loved Me. Father, I will that they also, whom You have given Me, be with Me where I am; that they may behold My glory, which You have given Me: for You loved Me before the foundation of the world. O Righteous Father, the

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

world has not known You: but I have known You, and these have known that You have sent Me. And I have declared unto them Your name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith You have loved Me may be in them, and I in them (John 17:1-26 ET).

**3. The Church praying for a replacement for Judas.
(This is the Church's first prayer.)**

And they prayed, and said, You, Lord, which know the hearts of all men, show whether of these two You have chosen, that he may take part of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place. And they gave forth their lots; and the lot fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with the eleven apostles (Acts 1:24- 26 ET).

4. The Church praying for boldness

And being let go, they went to their own company, and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said unto them. And when they heard that, they lifted up their voice to God with one accord, and said, "Lord, You are God, which have made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is: Who by the mouth of Your servant David have said, 'Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ.' For of a truth against Your Holy Child Jesus, Whom You have anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered together, for to do whatsoever Your hand and Your counsel determined before to be done. And now, Lord, behold their threatenings: and grant unto Your servants, that with all boldness they may speak Your word, by stretching forth Your hand to heal; and that signs and wonders may be done by the name of your holy child Jesus.

And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and they spoke the word of God with boldness (Acts 4:23-31 ET).

5. Paul's Prayers For The Ephesian Church

Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers; That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him: the eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that you may know what is the hope of His calling, and what the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints, and what is the exceeding greatness of His power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of His mighty power, which He wrought in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead, and set Him at His own right hand in the heavenly places, far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: and has put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be the head over all things to the church, which is His body, the fullness of Him that fills all in all” (Ephesians 1:16-23 ET).

For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, of Whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, that He would grant you, according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with might by His Spirit in the inner man; that Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that you, being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; and to know the love of Christ, which passes knowledge, that you might be filled with all the fullness of God. Now unto Him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that works in us, unto Him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen (Ephesians 3:14-21 ET).

6. Paul’s Prayer For the Colossians Church

For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that you might be filled with the knowledge of His will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; that you might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; strengthened with all might, according to His glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness; giving thanks unto the Father, which has made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who has delivered us from the power of darkness, and has translated us into the kingdom

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

of His dear Son: in whom we have redemption through His blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: for by Him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by Him, and for Him: and He is before all things, and by Him all things consist (Colossians 1:9-17 ET).

7. Paul's Prayers For the Thessalonians Church

We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers; remembering without ceasing your work of faith, and labor of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father; knowing, brothers beloved, your election of God (1 Thessalonians 1:2-4 ET).

Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith? Now God Himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, direct our way unto you. And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one toward another, and toward all men, even as we do toward you: to the end he may establish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all His saints (1 Thessalonians 3:10-13 ET).

Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of His goodness, and the work of faith with power: that the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and you in Him, according to the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ (2 Thessalonians 1:11, 12 ET).

D. Jude's Message to the Church

Jude, the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called: mercy unto you, and peace, and love, be multiplied. Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that you should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints. For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord

Jesus Christ. I will therefore put you in remembrance, though you once knew this, how that the Lord, having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not. And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, He has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire. Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities. Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, "The Lord rebuke you." But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves. Woe unto them! For they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core. These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withers, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever. And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, "Behold, the Lord comes with ten thousands of His saints, to execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him. These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaks great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage. But, beloved, remember you the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; how that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the spirit. But you, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Spirit, keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life. And of some have compassion, making a difference: and others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh. Now unto Him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy, To the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

and ever. Amen (Jude ET).

E. John's Message to the Church

That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of life; (For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and show unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us;) That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that you also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full. This then is the message which we have heard of Him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all. If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: but if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and his word is not in us.

My little children, these things write I unto you, that you sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: and He is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world. And hereby we do know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments. He that says, I know him, and keeps not His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. But whoso keeps His word, in Him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in Him. He that says he abides in Him ought himself also so to walk, even as He walked. Brothers, I write no new commandment unto you, but an old commandment which you had from the beginning. The old commandment is the word which you have heard from the beginning. Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in Him and in you: because the darkness is past, and the true light now shines. He that says he is in the light, and hates his brother, is in darkness even until now. He that loves his brother abides in the light, and there is none you occasion of stumbling in him. But he that hates his brother is in darkness, and walks in darkness, and knows not whither he goes, because that darkness has blinded his

eyes. I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for His name's sake. I write unto you, fathers, because you have known Him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because you have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because you have known the Father. I have written unto you, fathers, because you have known Him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because you are strong, and the word of God abides in you, and you have overcome the wicked one. Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passes away, and the lust thereof: but he that does the will of God abides for ever. Little children, it is the last time: and as you have heard that anti-Christ shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time. They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us. But you have an unction from the Holy One, and you know all things. I have not written unto you because you know not the truth, but because you know it, and that no lie is of the truth. Who is a liar but he that denies that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denies the Father and the Son. Whosoever denies the Son, the same has not the Father: [but] he that acknowledges the Son has the Father also. Let that therefore abide in you, which you have heard from the beginning. If that which you have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, you also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father. And this is the promise that He has promised us, even eternal life. These things have I written unto you concerning them that seduce you. But the anointing which you have received of Him abides in you, and you need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teaches you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it has taught you, you shall abide in Him. And now, little children, abide in Him; that, when He shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before Him at His coming. If you know that He is righteous, you know that every one that does righteousness is born of Him.

Behold, what manner of love the Father has bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knows us not, because it knew him not. Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it does not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is. And every man that has this hope in him purifies himself,

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

even as He is pure. Whosoever commits sin transgresses also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law. And you know that He was manifested to take away our sins; and in Him is no sin. Whosoever abides in Him sins not: whosoever sins has not seen Him, neither known Him. Little children, let no man deceive you: he that does righteousness is righteous, even as He is righteous. He that commits sin is of the devil; for the devil sins from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil. Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for His seed remains in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever does not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loves not his brother. For this is the message that you heard from the beginning, that we should love one another. Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous. Marvel not, my brothers, if the world hate you. We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brothers. He that loves not his brother abides in death. Whosoever hates his brother is a murderer: and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him. Hereby perceive we the love of God, because He laid down His life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brothers. But whoso has this world's good, and sees his brother have need, and shuts up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwells the love of God in him? My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth. And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before Him. For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knows all things. Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God. And whatsoever we ask, we receive of Him, because we keep His commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in His sight. And this is His commandment, That we should believe on the name of His Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as He gave us commandment. And he that keeps his commandments dwells in Him, and he in Him. And hereby we know that He abides in us, by the Spirit which He has given us.

Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know you the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: and every spirit that confesses not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of anti- Christ, whereof you have heard that it

should come; and even now already is it in the world. You are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world. They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world hears them. We are of God: he that knows God hears us; he that is not of God hears not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error. Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loves is born of God, and knows God. He that loves not knows not God; for God is love. In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent His only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him. Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us, and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins. Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another. No man has seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwells in us, and His love is perfected in us. Hereby know we that we dwell in Him, and He in us, because He has given us of His Spirit. And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world. Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwells in him, and he in God. And we have known and believed the love that God has to us. God is love; and he that dwells in love dwells in God, and God in him. Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as He is, so are we in this world. There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear: because fear has torment. He that fears is not made perfect in love. We love Him, because He first loved us. If a man say, I love God, and hates his brother, he is a liar: for he that loves not his brother whom he has seen, how can he love God Whom he has not seen? And this commandment have we from him, That he who loves God love his brother also.

Whosoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loves Him that begot loves him also that is begotten of Him. By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep His commandments. For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments: and His commandments are not grievous. For whatsoever is born of God overcomes the world: and this is the victory that overcomes the world, even our faith. Who is he that overcomes the world, but he that believes that Jesus is the Son of God? This is He that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that bears witness, because the Spirit is truth. For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit: and these three are one. And there are three that bear witness in earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one. If we receive the

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God which He has testified of His Son. He that believes on the Son of God has the witness in himself: he that believes not God has made Him a liar; because he believes not the record that God gave of His Son. And this is the record, that God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. He that has the Son has life; and he that has not the Son of God has not life. These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that you may know that you have eternal life, and that you may believe on the name of the Son of God. And this is the confidence that we have in Him, that, if we ask any thing according to His will, He hears us: and if we know that He hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of Him. If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it. All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death. We know that whosoever is born of God sins not; but he that is begotten of God keeps himself, and that wicked one touches him not. And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lies in wickedness. And we know that the Son of God is come, and has given us an understanding, that we may know Him that is true, and we are in Him that is true, even in His Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life. Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen (1 John ET).

F. Sermon Outline From The Author of This Book

Title: BEARING UP UNDER PERSECUTION

Subject: Being victorious in persecution.

Scripture Background: 2 Thessalonians 1

Key Verse: “Who delivered us from so great a death, and does deliver: in Whom we trust that He will yet deliver us;” (2 Corinthians 1:10 ET).

INTRODUCTION: If you are a Christian, you are being persecuted! Paul tells us that “All that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.” (2 Timothy 3:12. KJV) When we think of a martyr we think of one being torn to death by wild beasts; Caleposius thrown into the river with a millstone about his neck; Saturnius fastened by the feet to the tail of a bull; Cassian, a Christian schoolmaster, beaten to death by his own scholars; Marcus, a bishop, hung to a

tree and stung to death by wasps; a Protestant clergyman being roasted alive by a slow fire. These most certainly are forms of persecution. However, these are only one type of persecution. Any kind of abuse you have as a result of your Christian faith is known as persecution.

I. In this sense we experience many subtle persecutions: These are the daily taskmasters, which grind away at our being and discourage us from doing our best for Jesus and His kingdom work.

A. There is the persecution of indifference toward the Gospel. They do not beat us, but they do not bless us either. The devil does not care how he gets you to quit—which is the reason for persecution—living for God and proclaiming the Good News to a lost world. As a manner of fact indifference is doing more to defeat the Christian cause than all the bodily abuse of the communist slave camps put together. It is a very subtle type of persecution.

B. There is the persecution of slander. This is talking you down before others. They will lie about you. They will say all manner of evil against you falsely for your Christian faith. They will call you a holy roller, a Mr. Goody-Goody, say you are too stuck-up to go to worldly places with them, and the like.

C. There is the persecution of temptation.

D. There is the persecution of false professors of religion. People profess everything in the Book and live by hook or crook. This makes your heart bleed. Something that touches the heart causes a deeper pain than that which touches the flesh.

We often wonder why Christians suffer persecution. A study of a few Bible passages will give us the answer.

II. Why Christians are persecuted:

A. Because you are different from “the world.”—“But call to remembrance the former days, in which after you were illuminated, you endured a great fight of afflictions. Partly, while you were made a gazing-stock both by reproaches and afflictions; and partly, while you became companions of them that were so used.”

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

(Hebrews 10:32, 33 ET) and “For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, abominable idolatries; Wherein they think it strange that you run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you:” (1 Peter 4:3, 4 ET).

We are living in a standardized world. There are standards for everything. A standard for intelligence, for measurements, for social living, for religion. We would not do so well if we did not have some standards to go by. Standards help us set goals and give purpose to life. One of the big sins that is spoken of as being an abomination to the Lord is an unjust balance. The Ten Commandments are yardsticks for our Christian life.

Holiness is the standard by which we enter into Heaven. The problem is not with standards, but with the world’s standards which are different, and in many instances, opposite from ours. The world says be served: we say serve. The world says get: we say give. The world says sin: we say stop sinning. The world says love self: we say love God and others first. Because our standards and goals are different from theirs, they persecute us.

B. In some cases, it is IGNORANCE on their part. “And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor Me” (John 16:3 ET).

C. In others, it is a hatred of God. “Remember the word that I said unto you, the servant is not greater than his Lord. If they have persecuted Me, they will persecute you; ...” (John 15:20 ET).

D. The world hates the Gospel. “Yet has he not root in himself, but endures for a while: for when tribulation or persecution arises because of the word by and by he is offended” (Matthew 13:21 ET). They see the Gospel, Consider the Gospel, and then reject it. Having rejected the Gospel, they persecute the Christian, which is a constant reminder of the Gospel they rejected. They cannot stand the Christian, because they cannot stand the Gospel. The Christian stands as a constant rebuke to a hardhearted sinner.

E. The world is too PROUD to humble itself to the demands of the Gospel. “The wicked, through the pride of his countenance, will not seek after God: God is not in all of his thoughts. His ways are always grievous; your judgments are far

above out of his sight: as for all his enemies, he puffs at them” (Psalm 10:4, 5 ET). The truth of the matter is: The Christian is an enemy of the world. The “puffs” of the wicked come to the Christian in the form of persecution.

F. In some cases, it is mistaken zeal. “They shall put you out of the synagogues: yes, the time comes, that whosoever kills you will think that he does God service” (John 16:2 ET). A person who is a Christian will not persecute, but will do all in his power to be a blessing to all with whom he comes in contact. If there is any persecuting going on, you can be sure it is not blessed of God.

Having considered some of the main reasons for being persecuted let us go on to how to bear up under it.

III. The Christians’ attitude toward persecution that will enable them to bear up under it.

A. In the first place, “Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not” (Romans 12:14 KJV). The Greek word εὐλογεῖτε used for bless in this passage carries with it the idea of speaking well of. The Greek word καταρασθε used for curse is to wish a curse against. What this passage is saying is that when we are being persecuted we are to keep sweet and go out of our way to be good to our persecutors. There is no place for a vengeful or grudging attitude in the Christian’s heart. Not even in a time of persecution of the worst kind. Find something good to say about the person who speaks evil of you. Speak well of your persecutor and wish the best for him. This is the Christian attitude.

B. Pray FOR the salvation of your persecutor. “You have heard that it has been said, ‘You shall love your neighbor, and hate your enemy.’ but I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; That you may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: ...” (Matthew 5:43-45a ET).

Only a true Christian can keep this command of Jesus. In this sense, persecution is the “acid test” for your Christian experience. If you cannot love and pray for the salvation of your enemy, then you need to dig a little deeper in the Lord. **Illustration:** Kick a skunk and you have its smell on you for a long time. Kick a honeycomb and it sticks to you and you are obliged to eat it. Kick a carnal Christian and he will raise up a stink. Kick a sanctified Christian and the love of

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

God will gush out all over you and you will long for that kind of religion. You do not prove anything by “flying off the handle” when someone does not treat you right. Only as you bless can the world know there is a God in your heart Who really loves and cares for them. Are you revealing God to the world or the world to God? God knows which it is! You cannot fool Him!

C. Pray for your fellow saints who are suffering under persecution. Paul says: “Finally, brothers, pray for us, that the Word of the Lord may have free course, and be glorified, even as it is with you: and that we may be delivered from unreasonable and wicked men: for all men have not faith” (2 Thessalonians 3:1, 2 ET). A day should not go by without us praying for people in communist lands and for our fellow Christians who are under attack at home and abroad.

D. Be assured that God will not forsake you in your time of persecution. “Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as you have: for He has said, ‘I will never leave you, nor forsake you.’ So that we may boldly say, ‘The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me’ “(Hebrews 13:5, 6 ET).

Our key verse is a good one for this. Notice the three tenses of this verse and the victory that Paul enjoyed in the midst of persecution. Do not get discouraged and quit. God is on your side. He will take you through. “This is the victory that overcomes the world, even your faith” (1 John 5:4b ET).

E. Commit yourself to God when you are under persecution. “ Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God commit the keeping of their souls to Him in well doing, as unto a faithful Creator” (1 Peter 4:19 ET). “You will keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on You: because he trusts in You. Trust you in the Lord for ever: for in the Lord Jehovah is everlasting strength:” (Isaiah 26:3, 4 ET). Keep your hand in God’s hand He will bring you through the fires of persecution without the smell of smoke upon you. God is able to deliver you from the mouths of the lions. He will see you through because He loves you with an everlasting love. Learn how to rest in the arms of Jesus. Your life is always safe when it is in the arms of Jesus.

F. Show patience toward your persecutor. “Being persecuted, we suffer it: (1 Corinthians 4:12c KJV). “Yet if any man suffers as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify God on this behalf” (1 Peter 4:16 ET).

When you are persecuted do not feel that it is a disgrace, but thank God that you are counted worthy to suffer shame with your Lord. This will help a lot toward a person fighting back if he realizes it is an honor to suffer for Jesus' sake.

G. Rejoice in the midst of persecution. “Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in Heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you” (Matthew 5:12 KJV). We can rejoice because our reward will be great in Heaven. God has wonderful things awaiting those who will endure unto the end. As Paul put it: “For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us” (Romans 8:18 KJV).

H. Seek to glorify God in times of persecution. “If you be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are you; for the Spirit of Glory and of God rests upon you: on their part He is evil spoken of, but on your part He is glorified” (1 Peter 4:14 ET).

Illustration: When clay is placed in the sun, it will become hard. On the other hand, if you put wax in the sun it will become soft. It depends on the nature of the material as to whether it gets hard or soft. The same with a person. It depends upon the individual. A hypocrite will become hard and forsake God when times of persecution come. A Christian will be softer toward God, and seek to mold his life more nearly to what God expects it to be.

THE SUM OF THE MATTER IS THIS: We stand in a large army of faithful Christians who have fought a good fight of love for hate, blessing for cursing, help for hindrances, compassion for indifference, joy for sorrow, and good for bad. In doing so, they have shown us how it is done. They had recompense unto God and counted not their lives dear unto themselves that they may be counted worthy of the incorruptible crown of life, which does not perish. They saw the hand of God deliver them many times. They were delivered from prison, and found grace to rejoice in the midst of great persecution. These stand as a reminder to us of what God will do for those who will take His way of blessing and love toward those who persecute them. Will the real Christian please stand up and fight for God and His message of holiness? Your prize awaits you at the close of life's little day!

VII. The Master's Battle Plan

And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, "All power is given unto Me in heaven and in earth. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit: teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen (Matthew 28:18-20 ET).

And He said unto them, "Go you into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believes and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believes not shall be damned" (Mark 16:15, 16 ET).

Then opened He their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures, and said unto them, "Thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in His name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And you are witnesses of these things. And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry you in the city of Jerusalem, until you be endued with power from on high (Luke 24:45-49 ET).

But you shall receive power, after that the Holy Spirit is come upon you: and you shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth (Acts 1:8 ET).

Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are you, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for My sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

You are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savor, wherewith shall it be salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden

under foot of men.

You are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it gives light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven (Matthew 5:3-16 ET).

With a pure heart and in the power of the Holy Spirit, we go out into the entire world to witness for Jesus Christ.

1. We proclaim (preach) the gospel of Jesus Christ.
2. We teach the ways of God so others can know Him.
3. We baptize those who have accepted the teachings and proclamation of the Gospel of Jesus Christ.
4. We witness: share with others what God has done for us.
5. In doing these things we keep the light of the Gospel of Jesus before everyone.
6. We rebuke the wicked and encourage the righteous.
7. We work as the salt and light of the world to bring health and healing to our sin sick world.

VIII. The Spiritual Renewal Mandate

I beseech you therefore, brothers, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be you transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God has dealt to every man the measure of faith. For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: so we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; or ministry, let us wait on our ministering: or he that teaches, on teaching; or he that exhorts, on exhortation: he that gives, let him do it with simplicity; he that rules, with diligence; he that shows mercy, with cheerfulness. Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good. Be kindly

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honor preferring one another; not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord; rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer; distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality. Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not. Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep. Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits. Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men. If it be possible, as much as lies in you, live peaceably with all men. Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, "Vengeance is mine; I will repay," saith the Lord. Therefore if your enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing you shall heap coals of fire on his head. Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good (Romans 12 ET).

Romans 12 gives us the characteristics of a person who experiences spiritual renewal. This is a checklist to help you stay on track. This is a daily, deliberate decision to follow your Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ at all times and places.

IX. The Order of Command

And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; for the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ: that we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; but speaking the truth in love, may grow up into Him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: from whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplies, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, makes increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love (Ephesians 4:11-16 ET).

At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, "Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?" And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, and said, "Verily I say unto you, Except you be converted, and become as little children, you shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest

in the kingdom of heaven” (Matthew 18:1-4 ET).

But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; and whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant: even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give His life a ransom for many (Matthew 20:26-28 ET).

The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; neither as being lords over God’s heritage, but being examples to the flock. And when the Chief Shepherd shall appear, you shall receive a crown of glory that fades not away (1 Peter 5:1-4 ET).

As a warrior of Jesus Christ, you are in an army where everyone serves. God has put people in leadership positions to be under-shepherds. No one lords it over any one else. Everyone works for the common good, with each receiving orders from the Lord Jesus, Who is the Captain of the Lord’s Army. We are “workers together with God!”

X. The Warrior’s Seven Fitness Procedures

1. The Warrior’s Commitment

Commit your way unto the Lord; trust also in Him; and He shall bring it to pass (Psalm 37:5 ET).

Commit Your works unto the Lord, and your thoughts shall be established (Proverbs 16:3 ET).

And the things that you have heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit you to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also (2 Timothy 2:2 ET).

Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God commit the keeping of their souls to Him in well doing, as unto a faithful Creator (1 Peter 4:19 ET).

Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted. Neither be you idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, “The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.” Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand. Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents. Neither murmur you, as some of them also murmured,

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

and were destroyed of the destroyer. Now all these things happened unto them for examples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come. Wherefore let him that thinks he stands take heed lest he fall. There has no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that you are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that you may be able to bear it. Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry (1 Corinthians 10:6-14 ET).

When talking of commitment, it is as important to know what not to do as well as what to do. Warriors of Jesus are not to commit sin. They are to commit their ways and works to God to be established in Him. They are to commit their souls to the Lord. What God teaches them are to be committed to faithful men so they can teach it to others.

2. The Warrior's Boot Camp!

And indeed you do it toward all the brothers which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brothers, that you increase more and more; and that you study to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, as we commanded you; that you may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that you may have lack of nothing (1 Thessalonians 4:10-12 ET).

Study to show yourself approved unto God, a workman that needs not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of Truth (2 Timothy 2:15 ET).

Blessed is the man that walks not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor stands in the way of sinners, nor sits in the seat of the scornful. But his delight is in the law of the Lord; and in His law does he meditate day and night. And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that brings forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he does shall prosper (Psalm 1:1-3 ET).

As we neither walk in the counsel of the ungodly, stand in the way of sinners nor sit in the seat of the scornful and make God's Word our delight, God blesses us. This takes real discipline. This also gives us the ability to speak God's Word with power and authority. Taking God's way of doing ministry for Him is the true mark of one who is called of the Lord. This takes much work.

3. The Warrior's Exercise

And herein do I exercise myself, to have always a conscience void of offense toward God, and toward men (Acts 24:16 ET).

But refuse profane and old wives' fables, and exercise yourself rather unto

godliness. For bodily exercise profits little: but godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come (1 Timothy 4:7, 8 ET).

But strong food belongs to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil (Hebrews 5:14 ET).

Now no chastening for the present seems to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yields the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby (Hebrews 12:11 ET).

Exercise is very important for our spiritual health as well as our physical health. We are to exercise in the following areas: 1. To have “a conscience void of offense” toward God or men. 2. To exercise yourself unto godliness. 3. To eat the “strong food” of God so you will be able to “discern” between good and evil. 4. To accept discipline so you will be able to “yield the peaceable fruit of holiness.”

4. The Warrior's Benefits

Bless the Lord, O my soul, and forget not all His benefits: Who forgives all your iniquities; Who heals all Your diseases; Who redeems your life from destruction; Who crowns you with loving-kindness and tender mercies; Who satisfies your mouth with good things; so that your youth is renewed like the eagle's (Psalm 103:2-5 ET).

Then Peter began to say unto Him, “Lo, we have left all, and have followed you.” And Jesus answered and said, “Verily I say unto you, There is no man that has left house, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My sake, and the gospel's, but he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life. But many that are first shall be last; and the last first (Mark 10:28-31 ET).

He gives power to the faint; and to them that have no might he increases strength. Even the youths shall faint and be weary, and the young men shall utterly fall: but they that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint (Isaiah 40:29-31 ET).

The benefits of a warrior of Jesus are out of this world. There is nothing like it anywhere else. When you do God's will, you receive a hundredfold in this life plus eternal life. God makes those He can trust healthy, wealthy and wise. He

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

gives you strength as your day is. He blesses you beyond measure.

5. The Warrior's armor

Love works no ill to his neighbor: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law. And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed. The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armor of light. Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. But put you on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof (Romans 13:10-14 ET).

By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armor of righteousness on the right hand and on the left, (2 Corinthians 6:7 ET).

Wherefore take unto you the whole armor of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; and your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith you shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints; and for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel, for which I am an ambassador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak (Ephesians 6:13-20 ET).

We must daily take up each piece of the armor and put it on. It covers and protects us completely. There is no armor for our back, because we do not run from the enemy. We face him head on. First, we need to put on the armor of light so we will not walk in darkness. Next we must put on the armor of righteousness on the right side and the left. We do this so we will not get sidetracked on side issues. Then we are to have full "body" armor. This is our full salvation through what Jesus has done for us. The shield of faith protects us from doubts and fears. The sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God, gives us an offense against the devil's deceptions and assaults.

6. The Warrior's Diet

And God said, "Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for food" (Genesis 1:29 ET).

O taste and see that the Lord is good: blessed is the man that trusts in Him. O fear the Lord, you His saints: for there is no want to them that fear Him (Psalm 34:8, 9 ET).

The diet of the warrior of Jesus is very different than that of the world. First, we feast on the Lord with a simple, childlike faith in Him. The physical diet is defined in Genesis 1:29. God does not make mistakes. He did it right the first time. It is raw fruits, vegetables, nuts and seeds. This is the very best diet for the animal kingdom, and the human race. Yes, it should be eaten raw and organic as much as possible. Then you should have 1 ounce of pure water for every 2 pounds of body weight. This is God's diet for ultimate health.

7. The Warrior's Rest

Rest in the Lord, and wait patiently for Him: fret not yourself because of him who prospers in his way, because of the man who brings wicked devices to pass (Psalm 37:7 ET).

Blessed is the man whom You chasten, O Lord, and teaches him out of Your law; that You may give him rest from the days of adversity, until the pit be dug for the wicked. For the Lord will not cast off His people, neither will He forsake His inheritance (Psalm 94:12-14 ET).

And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious (Isaiah 11:10 KJV).

Come unto Me, all you that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you, and learn of Me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and you shall find rest unto your souls. For My yoke is easy, and My burden is light (Matthew 11:28-30 ET).

Then had the churches rest throughout all Judea and Galilee and Samaria, and were edified; and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the Holy Spirit, were multiplied (Acts 9:31 ET).

There remains therefore a rest to the people of God. For he that is entered into his rest, he also has ceased from his own works, as God did from His (Hebrews 4:9, 10 ET).

The rest of the warrior of Jesus is an internal assurance that will keep that

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

person regardless of the circumstances. The world needs this rest so very much. Share your rest with others. Thank God for it.

XI. The War-Cry Crystallized

The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because He has anointed Me to preach the gospel to the poor; He has sent Me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, to preach the acceptable year of the Lord (Luke 4:18, 19 ET).

The Spirit of the Lord God is upon Me; because the Lord has anointed Me to preach good tidings unto the meek; He has sent Me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; to proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; to appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the Lord, that He might be glorified. And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations. And strangers shall stand and feed your flocks, and the sons of the alien shall be your plowmen and your vine dressers. But you shall be named the Priests of the Lord: men shall call you the Ministers of our God: you shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall you boast yourselves. For your shame you shall have double; and for confusion they shall rejoice in their portion: therefore in their land they shall possess the double: everlasting joy shall be unto them. For I the Lord love judgment, I hate robbery for burnt offering; and I will direct their work in truth, and I will make an everlasting covenant with them. And their seed shall be known among the Gentiles, and their offspring among the people: all that see them shall acknowledge them, that they are the seed which the Lord has blessed. I will greatly rejoice in the Lord, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for He has clothed Me with the garments of salvation, He has covered Me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decks himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorns herself with her jewels. For as the earth brings forth her bud, and as the garden causes the things that are sown in it to spring forth; so the Lord God will cause righteousness and praise to spring forth before all the nations (Isaiah 61 ET)

“Our cattle also shall go with us; there shall not an hoof be left behind; for thereof must we take to serve the Lord our God; and we know not with what we must serve the Lord, until we come thither” (Exodus 10:26 ET).

So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, “Death is swallowed up in victory.” “O death, where is Your sting? O grave, where is Your victory?” The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my beloved brothers, be you steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labor is not in vain in the Lord (1 Corinthians 15:54-58 ET).

For whatsoever is born of God overcomes the world: and this is the victory that overcomes the world, even our faith (1 John 5:4 ET).

Whether therefore you eat, or drink, or whatsoever you do, do all to the glory of God (1 Corinthians 10:31 ET).

The battle cry is to take the whole kingdom for the Lord Jesus Christ. Do not leave anything behind. Go from victory to victory. Spread the love of God everywhere you go. Keep faithful to the end. Fight until every wrong is made right and “the kingdoms of this world become the kingdoms of the Lord and of His Christ.”

XII. The Field of Operation

And He spoke many things unto them in parables, saying, “Behold, a sower went forth to sow; and when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: and when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: but other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixty-fold, some thirty-fold. Who has ears to hear, let him hear (Matthew 13:3-9 ET).

Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, “Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: for I was an hungered, and you gave Me food: I was thirsty, and you gave Me drink: I was a stranger, and you took Me in: naked, and you clothed Me: I was sick, and

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

you visited Me: I was in prison, and you came unto Me.” Then shall the righteous answer Him, saying, “Lord, when saw we You an hungered, and fed You? or thirsty, and gave You drink? When saw we You a stranger, and took You in? or naked, and clothed You? Or when saw we You sick, or in prison, and came unto You?” And the King shall answer and say unto them, “Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as you have done it unto one of the least of these My brothers, you have done it unto Me” (Matthew 25:34-40 ET).

The warrior’s “field of operation” is anywhere there are hurting people. The world is his parish. He goes about doing good to the bodies and souls of all mankind.

XIII. The Cleanup Operation

Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me (Psalm 51:10 KJV).

Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way? By taking heed thereto according to Your Word (Psalm 119:9 ET).

All the ways of a man are clean in his own eyes; but the Lord weighs the spirits (Proverbs 16:2 ET).

Who can say, “I have made my heart clean, I am pure from my sin?” (Proverbs 20:9 ET).

Wash you, make you clean; put away the evil of your doings from before My eyes; cease to do evil; learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow (Isaiah 1:16, 17 ET).

And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called the way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it shall be for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein. No lion shall be there, nor any ravenous beast shall go up thereon, it shall not be found there; but the redeemed shall walk there: and the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away (Isaiah 35:8-10 KJV).

Awake, awake; put on your strength, O Zion; put on your beautiful garments, O Jerusalem, the holy city: for henceforth there shall no more come into you the uncircumcised and the unclean (Isaiah 52:1 ET).

Depart you, depart you, go you out from thence, touch no unclean thing; go you out of the midst of her; be you clean, that bear the vessels of the Lord (Isaiah

52:11 ET).

“Can the Ethiopian change his skin, or the leopard his spots? Then may you also do good, that are accustomed to do evil. Therefore will I scatter them as the stubble that passes away by the wind of the wilderness. This is your lot, the portion of your measures from Me,” saith the Lord; “because you have forgotten Me, and trusted in falsehood. Therefore will I discover your skirts upon your face, that your shame may appear. I have seen your adulteries, and your neighings, the lewdness of your whoredom, and your abominations on the hills in the fields. Woe unto you, O Jerusalem! will you not be made clean? When shall it once be? (Jeremiah 13:23-27 ET).

And I will cleanse them from all their iniquity, whereby they have sinned against Me; and I will pardon all their iniquities, whereby they have sinned, and whereby they have transgressed against Me (Jeremiah 33:8 ET).

Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and you shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. And I will put My Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in My statutes, and you shall keep My judgments, and do them. And you shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; and you shall be My people, and I will be your God. I will also save you from all your uncleanness: and I will call for the corn, and will increase it, and lay no famine upon you. And I will multiply the fruit of the tree, and the increase of the field, that you shall receive no more reproach of famine among the heathen. Then shall you remember your own evil ways, and your doings that were not good, and shall lothe yourselves in your own sight for your iniquities and for your abominations (Ezekiel 36:25-31 ET).

Neither shall they defile themselves any more with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions: but I will save them out of all their dwelling places, wherein they have sinned, and will cleanse them: so shall they be My people, and I will be their God (Ezekiel 37:23 ET).

And they shall teach My people the difference between the holy and profane, and cause them to discern between the unclean and the clean. And in controversy they shall stand in judgment; and they shall judge it according to My judgments: and they shall keep My laws and My statutes in all My assemblies; and they shall hallow My Sabbaths (Ezekiel 44:23, 24 ET).

“In that day there shall be a fountain opened to the house of David and to the

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness. And it shall come to pass in that day," saith the Lord of hosts, "that I will cut off the names of the idols out of the land, and they shall no more be remembered: and also I will cause the prophets and the unclean spirit to pass out of the land" (Zechariah 13:1, 2 ET).

Be you not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship has righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion has light with darkness? And what concord has Christ with Belial? Or what part has he that believes with an infidel? And what agreement has the temple of God with idols? for you are the temple of the living God; as God has said, "I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be you separate," said the Lord, "and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. And will be a Father unto you, and you shall be My sons and daughters," saith the Lord Almighty (2 Corinthians 6:14-18 ET).

Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God (2 Corinthians 7:1 KJV).

That He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, that He might present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish (Ephesians 5:26, 27 ET).

For God has not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness. He therefore that despises, despises not man, but God, who has also given unto us His Holy Spirit (1 Thessalonians 4:7, 8 ET).

For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifies to the purifying of the flesh: how much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the Eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? (Hebrews 9:13, 14 ET).

But He gives more grace. Wherefore He said, God resists the proud, but gives grace unto the humble. Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. Draw near to God, and He will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners; and purify your hearts, you double minded. Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness. Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He shall lift you up (James 4:6-10 ET).

If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: but if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin. ... If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness (1 John 1:6, 7, 9 ET).

And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints (Revelation 19:8 KJV).

There is much uncleanness in our churches and our world. As you look at the above passages of Scripture you will see that the heart is what needs to be cleansed. The heart needs to be cleansed from sin and sinning. This can only be accomplished through the blood of Jesus Christ. The warrior of Jesus needs to be pure in body, soul and spirit. Anything less than this is subnormal Christianity. Our churches are full of non-biblical doctrines or teachings that are encouraging the wicked to remain in their sinfulness and disgraceful living in the name of Jesus Christ. So we have everything from “born-again homosexuals” to “sinning saints.” First, we need to clean such bold-faced corruption out of our hearts and lives. Then, there is the heart- searching task of clearing our church rolls of all members who refuse to turn away from their rebellion against God and His ways. Lastly, the cleansed church needs to go into all the world with the gospel of Jesus Christ to clean up all the abominations and tyrannical activities that are destroying everything that is dear to God in every nation.

XIV. The Victory Celebration

A bruised reed shall He not break, and smoking flax shall He not quench, till He send forth judgment unto victory. And in His name shall the Gentiles trust (Matthew 12:20, 21 ET).

In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, “Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is Your sting? O grave, where is Your victory?” The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my beloved brothers, be you steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labor is not in vain in the Lord (1 Corinthians 15:52-58 ET).

Whosoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loves Him that begot loves Him also that is begotten of Him. By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments. For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments: and His commandments are not grievous. For whatsoever is born of God overcomes the world: and this is the victory that overcomes the world, even our faith. Who is he that overcomes the world, but he that believes that Jesus is the Son of God? This is He that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that bears witness, because the Spirit is truth. For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit: and these three are one. And there are three that bear witness in earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one. If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God which He has testified of His Son. He that believes on the Son of God has the witness in himself: he that believes not God has made Him a liar; because he believes not the record that God gave of His Son. And this is the record, that God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. He that has the Son has life; and he that has not the Son of God has not life. These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that you may know that you have eternal life, and that you may believe on the name of the Son of God. And this is the confidence that we have in Him, that, if we ask any thing according to His will, He hears us: and if we know that He hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of Him. If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it. All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death. We know that whosoever is born of God sins not; but he that is begotten of God keeps himself, and that wicked one touches him not. And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lies in wickedness. And we know that the Son of God is come, and has given us an understanding, that we may know Him that is true, and we are in Him that is true, even in His Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life. Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen (1 John 5:1-21 ET).

The warrior of Jesus Christ finds reason to celebrate victory on three fronts: 1.

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Victory that is won in our hearts as sin is overcome on a day-by-day, moment-by-moment basis by the mighty working of the Holy Spirit in our inner beings. 2. Victory over the circumstances of our daily life in answer to prayer. 3. The ultimate victory when all the warriors of Jesus stand around the throne of God in the Holy City where all is peace and rest.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

STEP 4

Chapter 1 - You will develop skills in sound reasoning.

The Logical Process Diagrammed

Chapter 2 - You learn Christ-centered science assumptions.

Chapter 3 - You are shown a way to test your science with reality.

Chapter 4 - You are given a way to maintain good Biblical-based health.

Chapter 5 - You develop a way to communicate your faith to others.

The Interactive Communication Triangle

**DEVELOPING A SOUND MIND FOR GREATER SERVICE FOR GOD
AND OTHERS**

INTRODUCTION

Because the field of science has to do with sound reasoning, you need to have a picture of how to keep your reasoning powers from getting sidetracked. In Chapter 1, I am going to help you do this by giving you a model to follow, which will enable you to test your reasoning to see if it is good or bad. (Notice: Much of what is peddled as sound reasoning is only someone's philosophy of the facts you have displayed before you.) As a good scientist, you need to use sound reasoning that will give you correct premises leading you to correct conclusions. Chapter 2 will give you the basic assumptions most of today's good scientists are using to do high-quality science. Chapter 3.1 will handle the importance of using all the facts at hand. Chapter 3.2 will show you how to use as many senses as you can. Chapter 3.3 will show you how to have your results tested by others in and out of your field. Chapter 3.4 will show you how to test scientific formulas. Chapter 3.5 will show you how to apply the tested scientific formulas to real life situations. Chapter 3.6 will talk to you about how to stay honest in your interpretations of the material at hand. Chapter 3.7 will show you how to work with other people who are in non-scientific professions. Chapter 4 will show you how to keep yourself healthy so you have self-control and physical endurance to do the will of God. Chapter 5 will show you how to communicate your faith-based knowledge and wisdom to others.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

For God has not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind (2 Timothy 1:7).

CHAPTER 1

THE FINE ART OF SOUND REASONING

1a. Introduction

You need to understand how to reason correctly. To do this you must have a good foundation for the two basic types of reasoning—inductive and deductive. Inductive reasoning is developing general principles from individual facts. Deductive reasoning uses the assumptions or general principles you developed in inductive reasoning to find specific instances or classes of instances.

You are now entering the world of sound reasoning!
Fasten your seatbelt, relax and enjoy the scenery!

1b. Inductive Reasoning

The first thing you need to do is to know how to make sure your premises or general principles are true. This is done by correct forms of induction. In determining truth from an **inductive** point of reference, you need to ask three questions: (1) Is it provable? (2) Is it testable? (3) Is it workable?

1. Is it provable?

It is provable if it is **observable** or **probable**. In small samples, you can conclude that it is completely reliable if your observations are correct. In instances where you cannot touch a sample with your unaided senses, you can build an instrument to aid you. In large samples—where not all events can be observed—you need to rely on such things as **generalizations, statistics, and probability**. The degree of probability can go from absolutely true to absolutely false.

Many good books are on the market today that will help you extend your inductive reasoning skills. It would be helpful to you at this point to go to your library and check out some of these books.

2. Is it testable?

It is testable if you can formulate a **hypothesis** that can be worked into an **experiment**. Do the following to set up a workable hypothesis: (1) Carefully define the problem or situation you are exploring. (2) Assemble all the relevant facts. (3) Set up several possible solutions or explanations (hypotheses) from your data. (4) Set up a test (an experiment) for each individual hypothesis. (5) Fine tune the hypotheses from the test results and remove the ones that do not pass the test. (6) Go through the above steps until you are pleased with your finished fine-tuned hypothesis. (7) Let an unbiased person test your results (finished hypothesis).

3. Is it workable?

It is workable if it can be set into **practice**. This has to do with **cause and effect**. If you know the cause, you can produce the effect. Ask yourself the following questions. Can it be repeated in a similar situation with the same ingredients? Will it work the same way every time? What effect does the environment have on it? What effect does pressure have on it? How can it be used? How practicable is it? Where can it be used? Who can use it? This would lead you from the inductive into the deductive area of your reasoning diagram—going from the theoretical to the practical.

Most of the work in the area of true science would be inductive in nature. When you go into the area of **deductive reasoning**, you are applying your scientific principles to working models. You are then entering the fields of industry and technology. Many of your modern advances in the fields of industry and technology have come through the general principles given to you by good scientists' research.

1c. Deductive Reasoning

Now let us look at the deductive area of reasoning. You are now going to take the general principles that you developed through inductive reasoning and use them to furnish working models. This is the difference between knowledge and wisdom. **Knowledge** comes to you from the inductive side of the reasoning diagram shown above and **wisdom**, which is the application of your knowledge, comes to you from the deductive side of the diagram. To keep a balance between knowledge and wisdom you need to function from both sides of the logic diagram simultaneously. **Godly wisdom** will help you do the right thing with your knowledge. It will help you use your knowledge in an “ethically correct” manner.

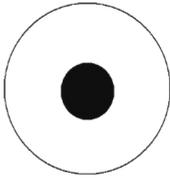
Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

This will help you to elevate your society rather than being an instrument of destruction through selfish actions and attitudes that hurt rather than help. It will help you realize you cannot do without God and His Holy Word as you do good science.

1d. Four forms of the categorical premise

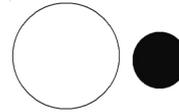
Let us first look at the four (4) forms of the categorical premise. (Note: Each premise can only have two terms!)

A-FORM (All novae are light years away.)
All of one group is included in the other one.



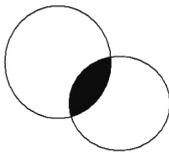
The 1st term is distributed.*
The 2nd term is undistributed.

E-FORM (No dog has wings.)
All of one group is excluded from the other one.



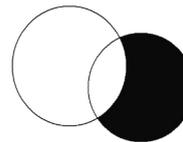
Both are distributed

I-FORM (Most birds can fly.)
Some of one group is included in the other one.



Both are undistributed

O-FORM (Most plants are not trees.)
Some of one group is excluded from the other one.



The 1st term is undistributed
The 2nd term is distributed.

*Distributed mean all the members of one class are within the other class.
Undistributed means less than all the members of one class are within the other one.

Note: These four (4) forms can also be used to check the logic of the inductive

generalization processes.

1e. Relationship to the four forms of premises

Consider the following: If one form is true, you may or may not be able to change it to one of the other forms. This diagram shows the results of an attempted change.

If the A-form (all Inclusive) is true, then its change to

E-form is false;

I-form is true;

O-form is false.

If the E-form (all exclusive) is true, then its change to

A-form is false;

I-form is false;

O-form is true.

If the I-form (some inclusive) is true then its change to

A-form is doubtful;

E-form is false;

O-form is doubtful.

If the O-form (some exclusive) is true, then its change to

A-form is false;

E-form is doubtful;

I-form is doubtful.

If. Four steps to follow to test the validity of your categorical syllogism are:

Step 1: Must have only three terms with each being used twice. Electro

Step 2: Must have no exclusion, or exactly two, with one being in the conclusion.

Step 3: The middle term appears in both premises and distributes at least once.

Step 4: Each term distributed in the conclusion must also be distributed in the premise in which it appears.

A **categorical syllogism** has two premises (major and minor), an inference, and a conclusion. The inference is the reasoning that leads to the conclusion, and is

not written in the text. When the categorical syllogism is set up correctly, it becomes a concrete argument.

1g. The hypothetical syllogism

The **hypothetical syllogism** is the “if...then...” syllogism. It can be used in induction as well as deduction. The first part is the antecedent and the second part is the consequent.

The minor premise determines the logic. The minor premise can do four (4) things relative to the major premise:

1. It can affirm the antecedent and be valid.
2. It can deny the antecedent and be invalid.
3. It can affirm the consequent and be invalid.
4. It can deny the consequent and be valid.
5. “If and only if” hypothetical syllogisms are valid in all four (4) of these areas.

Note: In Inductive reasoning you make the hypothesis the antecedent and the possible proof becomes the consequent. This is the idea of cause and effect.

1h. The alternative and disjunctive syllogisms

The **alternative** and **disjunctive syllogisms** can be used separately or together. The alternative syllogism is the “either alternative 1 or alternative 2” syllogism and the disjunctive syllogism is “__ cannot be both Disjunctive 1 and disjunctive 2” syllogism. When you put these together, you have the “either alternative 1 or alternative 2 but you cannot do both” variety.

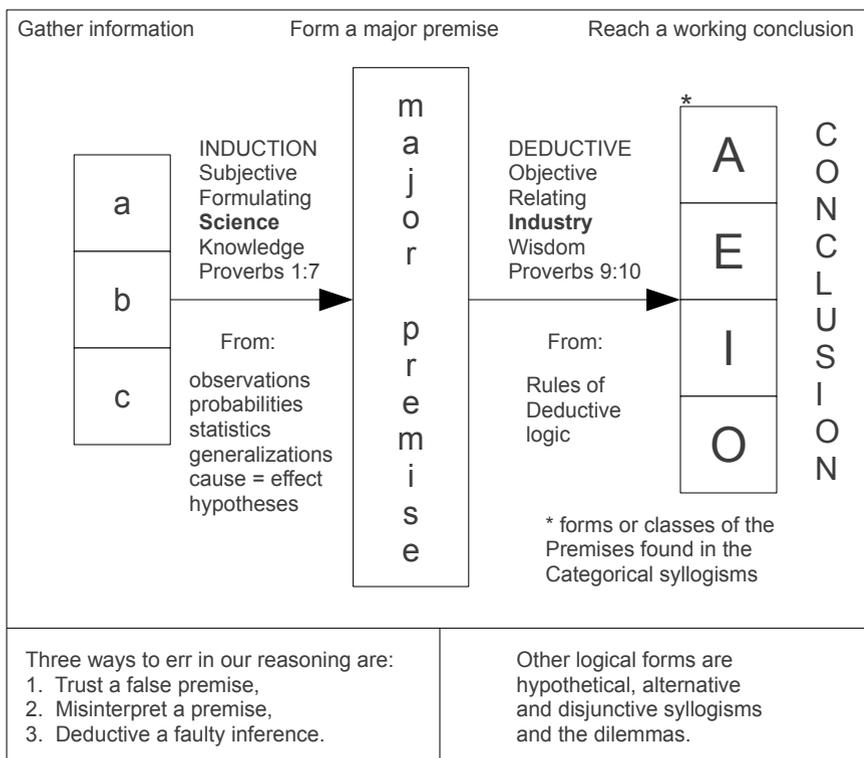
1. If you affirm one of the two alternatives with the minor premise, the other one is invalid. Both may be correct.
2. If you deny one of the two alternatives with the minor premise, the other one is valid.
3. If you deny one of the two disjunctives with the minor premise, the other one is invalid.
4. If you affirm one of the two disjunctives with the minor premise, the other one is valid.

1i. Dilemmas

When you have an argument that has a mixture of hypothetical and alternative

propositions, you have a dilemma.

It would diagram like this:



The Logic Process Diagrammed

All the above information can be used to test the logic or sound reasoning of the various arguments you have given to you everyday. Use these freely and refuse to be persuaded to believe everything that comes your way. **“TEST THE SPIRITS TO SEE IF THEY ARE FROM GOD OR NOT.”** See **“38 Examples of Unsound Logical Processes”** listed below to see how careful you need to be so you are not lead into illogical thinking. In addition, Chapter 4 of STEP 5 of this book will show you how to use this chapter to examine the logic of textbooks and other materials. This will help you stay away from the false logic of “science, falsely so-called.”

CHAPTER SUMMARY

The information in this chapter will be used from time to time to show you how to do good logical science. You may use this material to test the logic of this book. Study the diagram at the top of this chapter and answer the following questions.

Chapter 1 Study Questions

1. What is deductive reasoning?
2. What is inductive reasoning?
3. How do these types of reasoning differ?
4. What are the laws of deductive reasoning?
5. What are some examples of bad reasoning?
See Appendix I for the answer to this question.
6. What are some of the ways to test your reasoning for soundness?
7. What does inductive reasoning use to come to its conclusions?
8. What are the steps used in examining hypotheses?
9. Here is an illogical reasoning example.
All cows eat grass.
Bessie eats grass.
Bessie is a cow.
10. What makes this illogical?
11. What do you need to do to make it logical?

Many illogical processes are used on you every day. This is a mere sampling of them. Your best defense against all of them is to have a sound understanding of good logical processes. The material the author of this book has given you will go a long way in helping you develop such a logic process. Use it freely.

Argument of the Beard

When you argue that there is no such thing as right and wrong, but only different shades of gray, you fall into this fallacy. Some questions are moral ones which must be answered according to the moral standards given to you in the Bible.

The solution is to understand which questions are moral and which are not. Good logic will prompt you to encourage others to obey the moral teachings of the Bible!

Argumentum ad Baculum

This is a situation where force or the threat of force is used in the place of sound reason.

The defense against this fallacy depends upon the situation at hand. If your life or the life of others is at risk, do what you have to do to insure the safety of everyone. Do not panic! Do not be intimidated. Remember, however, some things are worth dying for.

Argumentum ad Hominem

This is a situation where a person's character is placed under attack to discredit his argument.

The best way to handle this fallacy is to point out the man's character has nothing to do with his argument.

Argumentum ad Ignorantiam

This fallacy seeks to win an argument by proving the opposite view is false and thus the other one must be true. This is the argument from ignorance.

The best defense against this fallacy is to show this argument proves nothing.

Argumentum ad Misericordiam

This is the use of playing on a person's sympathy or pity rather than giving

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

sound arguments that will lead to sound judgment on the subject under question.

The best defense against this fallacy is to develop a strong sense of justice and insist everyone needs to take responsibility for his or her wrongdoing, regardless of the consequences.

Argumentum ad Populum

When a person's appeal is to popular sentiments rather than logic, they are practicing this fallacy. It is the popular saying, "Everyone is doing it."

This argument appeals to the "herd instinct." Even if everyone in the whole world is doing it, if it is wrong, it is still wrong.

Attitude Fitting

This is a favorite "brainwashing" scheme. These people find out what your attitude is on a given topic, and then package their argument to appear to be just the thing you want.

Before you accept a pleasing package, make sure it does not have a "rattlesnake" wrapped up in it. Check the package's claims before you open it. If it looks too good to be true, it just might be.

Begging the Question

When you assume what you are trying to prove is the ultimate definition of anything, you have committed this fallacy.

The best defense against this fallacy is being alert for unsupported assumptions and not being led astray by them.

Black-or-White Fallacy

When you suppose that for every question there are only two choices— one of which is right and the other is wrong—you fall into this fallacy.

Not every question or problem is a moral one. In such cases, there could be a number of helpful solutions.

Cliché Thinking

The use of conventional wisdom, proverbs, maxims, aphorisms, and familiar quotations to gain acceptance of an illogical argument is falling into this trap.

The best defense for this fallacy is to ask, "Is this true for this particular situation?"

Composition

This happens when you say the characteristics of each of the members of a group are the characteristics of the whole organization.

The best way to stay clear of this fallacy is to realize that people act differently in an organizational setting than they do as individuals.

Confident Manner

When a person gives the impression through his actions and attitudes that he is certainly right, he is using this fallacy.

Remember, just because a person seems to be sure of his argument, that does not make the argument correct.

Contradictory Assumptions

This is the idea of making two contradictory assumptions at the same time as though both are true.

This trick is used to confuse you. Look at both assumptions. See what they are. When you see they are contradictory, make a point of it and go on with the subject at hand.

Decision by Indecision

You would usually refer to this as procrastination. By not deciding to follow a course of action, you have decided against it.

Be a decisive person. Realize the refusal to decide an issue determines its outcome.

Diversion

This is a situation when a person changes the subject so as not to face the facts.

The best defense against this fallacy is to insist on keeping with the subject. Restate the subject to get back on the issue in question.

Division

This happens when you say the characteristics of the whole organization are the characteristics of each of its members.

Handle this fallacy the same way you would the composition fallacy.

Equivocation

This is the idea of changing the meaning of a word to mean something other than what your opponent had in mind.

The best defense against this fallacy is to have a careful definition of your terms.

Extension

When a person exaggerates an opponent's argument in such a way as to make it appear totally out of reason, he has committed this fallacy.

The best defense against this fallacy is to keep a "cool" head and kindly state the real issue.

False Obversion

This is the misuse of contrast or opposites to gain an argument.

The best defense is to examine all the evidence to see if it is relevant to the case in question.

False Conversion

When you make the subject the object or visa versa, you just might be committing this fallacy.

Your best defense against this fallacy is making sound logical inferences.

Hasty Generalization

This happens when you draw a wrong conclusion before you have all the facts. Perhaps you have your minds made up on a particular situation and do not care to face anything that goes against your ways of thinking.

The best way to stay clear of this fallacy is to be open to new facts about the subject in question. Take the time to do good science as outlined in this book.

Hypothesis Contrary to Fact

For a person to make a general statement that is predicting future events as the only possibility when there are a number of them, he is falling into this illogical trap.

The best defense against this is to examine all relevant facts relating to the hypothesis.

Leading Question

This is a loaded question. It causes you to admit something you do not want to admit.

The best way to counteract this fallacy is to show the question contains unwarranted assumptions, which are not based on the facts at hand.

Lifting Out of Context

This is done when a person's statement is taken out of context and placed into a contrary context with the intent of discrediting an opponent's argument.

The best defense against this fallacy is to state the text in its context and show what you really meant to say.

Meaning from Association

This is done by associating an unrelated object or person to an argument to make the argument more acceptable to the person you are trying to persuade.

The best defense against this fallacy is, do not allow yourself to be drawn into a situation because some great person is doing it. Advertisers use this trick all the time.

Misuse of Analogy

This takes place when you compare "apples with oranges" and attempt to make them identical in all aspects.

The best defense against this fallacy is to use another analogy, which points out the error of the one waged against you.

Misuse of Emotional Words

This is "name-calling" with emotionally arousing words to discredit an opponent's argument or to cause a diversion from the argument.

The best defense against this fallacy is to not get upset and stay with the subject.

Misuse of Humor

When you use humor to divert attention from a serious situation, you are falling into this illogical trap. Another name for this is scoffing.

The best defense against this fallacy is to restate the main issue and remind everyone that the humor provoking the laughter is irrelevant to the question under review.

Misuse of the Mean

You fall into this trap when you accept an argument because it is not as extreme as something else.

Remember, a white lie is just as bad as a black one. You need to do better than accept the lesser of two evils. You need to do the right thing.

Obfuscation

In this fallacy, a person uses meaningless words to camouflage his real motives.

The best defense against this is not to be caught up in many unrelated words. Reduce the argument to its bare meaning.

Oversimplification

When you take a complex situation where many factors are involved and try to “play it down” with a simple solution, you have fallen into this fallacy.

Many complex situations can be solved with a simple solution. For instance, if you are about to drown, the solution is to get you out of the water and to get the water out of you. However, some problems are not so simple. You need to have a solution to a problem done in stages. This is especially true when a person is involved in an unhealthy relationship or activity with another person, which adversely affects a number of people.

Pettifogging

When a person fogs over an argument with petty issues, that person is guilty of this fallacy.

The best defense against this fallacy is to point out that this is just an attempt to cloud over the main issue.

Post Hoc

This has to do with cause and effect of unrelated happenings, which are supposed to be related. Many of your superstitions are based on this unsound logic.

The best way to handle these is not to practice a “self-fulfilling prophecy.” Do not allow yourself to be emotionally involved in a cause and effect event unless it is proven by solid evidence.

Poisoning the Well

This is accomplished when a person discredits evidence, which is against his position, before it can be used against him.

The best defense against this fallacy is to insist all relevant material be examined for the merit of its own worth.

Prestige Jargon

When impressive, pompous language is used to impress people into accepting the argument a person is guilty of this illogical reasoning.

If you go away wondering what the person said, you are a victim of this fallacy. If a person cannot state his argument in easy-to-understand language, he probably does not have an argument.

Rationalizing

When a person attempts to protect his self-image with illogical reasoning, he is falling into this trap.

Do not allow yourself to make excuses for your faults. Face up to them. Correct the ones you can. Accept the faults you cannot correct.

Repeated Assertion

This fallacy has been committed when a lie has been repeated so many times it appears to be the truth.

Remember, a lie is a lie regardless of how often it is repeated.

Special Pleading

This takes place when you only argue the favorable facts and disregard the unfavorable ones.

Do not allow people to get you off the issue by playing on your likes and dislikes. Some people are very good at telling you what you want to hear. Accept the truth even if it does not fit in with your likes. Be cautious with an argument people give you which seems to be just what you want to hear. They may be playing on your emotions to get you to do what they want.

This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and you shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

(Galatians 5:16). If you then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sits on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth (Colossians 3:1, 2).

CHAPTER 2

BASIC ASSUMPTIONS IN GOOD SCIENCE CIRCLES

Introduction

Regardless of the validity of a person's conclusions, if the basic premises are false the reasoning is out of touch with reality. This gives a person a false sense of understanding of the material under investigation. Such a person could make the moon a living organism, the earth square or any other crazy thing that suited his fancy.

The basic assumptions listed below will help you stay on track. They will help you avoid many illusions that appear to be sound reasoning. You will do good science and make a valuable contribution to other people when your science flows from these assumptions. You will feel a sense of mission as you do science in the way expressed in this chapter.

You cannot help seeing the noticeable difference between these assumptions and the ones the “run of the mill” scientist uses today. People used to refer to the Holy Bible as the “Good Book.” In the military, it was the most important item in your footlocker, with nothing to be placed on it. No one questioned its truthfulness and value. Even wicked people honored it. Many of the great scientific discoveries you enjoy today, were accomplished by the principles that you see listed below. Today, many of the “scientists” wish to go on pure reason. They do not want anything, including the teachings of the Bible, “to cloud their thinking.” Sad to say, some of your so-called “Christian” scientists have taken the same attitude. Make no doubt about it, I am not blushing or bashing when I tell you science without God's guiding light is “mad science.” Such science has created abortion on demand, communism, socialism, and many other cults and isms that have destroyed millions of innocent people down through the ages.

You are now entering the sanctuary of Good Science! Do you really want to honor God? If not, give this book to someone who does.

Assumption 1 - That the Holy Bible is the Word of God and thus is true in every area it addresses, including areas of science.

Then it happened. People in many fields of science—from astrophysics to theology—were driven to think it was their duty to let the rest of the world know how deceived they were down through the eons of time. They tell you the Biblical creation account has a “close connection with the cosmology found in earlier Babylonian documents.” These “enlightened ones” tell you the Bible is not to be taken literally. Anyone who differs with this “tolerant” group will open themselves up to ridicule and insults.

Beware! The Word of God has taken much abuse from the devil and his crowd from the beginning of time, but it still stands. You need to build your science on something that has stood the test of time and the abuse of its enemies as well as its “professed” friends.

Assumption 2 - That science is at its best when its goal is to bring glory and honor to God.

“Whether therefore you eat, or drink, or whatsoever you do, do all to the glory of God” (1 Corinthians 10:31).

Assumption 3 - That science is a part of God’s dominion command.

“And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moves upon the earth” (Genesis 1:28).

Assumption 4 - That nature is a means of revealing God’s attributes.

“For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believes; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith. For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold (restrain) the truth in unrighteousness; Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God has showed it unto them. For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.” (Romans 1:16-21).

Assumption 5 - That matter is **not** eternal.

“In the beginning God created the heaven (heavens) and the earth” (Genesis 1:1).

Assumption 6 - That origins and “why” questions are “out of the fields” of naturalists’ scientific investigations.

These two things cannot be reproduced in a lab. You discover origins through accurate history. You get your why questions answered by reading the “Manufacturer’s Handbook.” Your source of accurate history is the Bible (the Manufacturer’s Handbook), given to you through God’s revelation.

Assumption 7 - That life is a gift from God.

“Neither is worshipped with men’s hands, as though He needed any thing, seeing He gives to all life, and breath, and all things” (Acts 17:25).

Assumption 8 - That knowledge and wisdom begins with a fear of (respect for) God.

“The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the holy is understanding” (Proverbs 9:10).

“The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction” (Proverbs 1:7).

Assumption 9 - That God has given you all you need to be happy and free.

These secrets of life are to be discovered and enjoyed through an honest study of God’s Word, joined with God-honoring, scientific investigations.

Assumption 10 - That only good people can do good science.

“Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled. They profess that they know God; but in works they deny Him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate (good-for-nothing)” (Titus 1:15, 16).

Assumption 11 - That science is more productive when you are functioning in cooperation with God through a Divine-human partnership.

“For we are labourers together with God: you are God’s husbandry, you are God’s building” (1 Corinthians 3:9).

Assumption 12 - That anyone who is willing to pursue these basic assumptions can be a good science person.

Good science is not something that is exclusive. It is not mysterious. Anyone who is willing to be used of God to do the work of God can be a good scientist. Take courage and be involved in doing good science. Do not leave this to the “professional scientists.” Let God use you in this area. Be a worker together with Him. If God leads you to be a scientist, find a good Christ-centered school to attend that honors God’s Word. Such a school will have a desire to help you integrate your science with God’s dominion principle.

CHAPTER SUMMARY

In this chapter, I have given you guidelines to use when doing good science. You will do well to study and practice these carefully!

Chapter 2 Study Questions

1. What are the assumptions in good science circles?
2. What are the Scriptures used to back up these assumptions?
3. How do these assumptions differ from the pseudoscience of your day?
4. What are the advantages of following these assumptions?
5. What do you do to your own ruin if you ignore these assumptions?
8. What is the dominion principle?
7. Where does the Bible fit in to the good science agenda?

Let no man despise you youth; but be you an example of the believers, in word, in

conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity (1 Timothy 4:12).

CHAPTER 3

THE CHARACTERISTICS OF GOOD SCIENCE

3.1 Good Science Will Use All the Facts at Hand.

3.1a. Introduction

You can take science out of its context in the same way Scripture is taken out of context. In the process, you can make it say about anything you want it to say. To do good science you must gather all information you can find. Do not overlook any material that is relevant to your investigation of anything you want to study. Let your curiosity go as far as you please. Enjoy God’s wonderful creation in its contextual setting. Do not let yourself be led away into blind alleys by people or organizations that are carrying hidden agendas. Do not allow yourself to be turned away from anything that will help you understand what you are trying to discover.

Do not be afraid to examine all the facts. Seeing God created everything—including your ability to reason and ask questions—there is no real conflict between the Bible and true science. When everything is known about a given subject, it will always agree with God’s Word. You have not examined all the facts until you understand what God is telling you in His Word. You will be a better scientist if you allow the facts of the Bible to help you keep on track. In the previous chapter of this book, you were given the assumptions found in the Bible that you need to pursue to be a good Christian scientist. The foundation for the assumptions of true science circles, listed in the previous chapter, from God’s Word is the guiding light for doing good science.

In the remainder of this chapter, you will examine a few of the subjects that are of interest today. The first one will show you how hard it is for a scientist to calculate the age of the universe using half-life dating methods. There are too many blanks to be filled. The others will take a problem and show you how to find the facts and draw logical conclusions from them.

Are you ready to go into the wonderful world
of “God’s Good Science Laboratory?”

3.1b. Can you determine absolute ages by using half-life dating methods?

To answer this question you need to see how half-lives are determined. You also need to see if there are more ways than one to determine ages. After you do this, you need to see if the various methods bring the same answers. Then you need to consider margins of error in the determinations. In addition, you need to look at the problems involved in getting a pure sample to work with to insure your calculations are correct. When this is all put together, the answer to this question may be a real surprise to you.

How are half-lives determined? **Short half-life rates are measured by a graph.** You take a certain amount of known material and measure its radioactivity over a period of time. For example, you could take the Phosphorus-32 isotope and measure its weight every 3rd day over a period of a month. You will see the radioactive material getting less with time. When you place your data on a graph you will be able to see when half of the isotope transmutes (transforms) to the end product. This is the half-life of the isotope. **When it comes to isotopes with half-lives in millions and billions of years, you have insurmountable problems using this method.** For example, the Thorium-232 isotope has a half-life of 14,000,000,000 years. This is a very slow process. Over 1000 years, the parent's change would be very small. This means there is more room for error in the calculation of these half-lives. Thorium-232 decays to Radium-228 in the approximate half-life shown above. You have no way of getting absolute half-lives on the large half-life isotopes. This is the reason you can look in various textbooks and get everything from 2,000,000,000 to 4,510,000,000 years for the half-life of Uranium-238. **Half-life is determined by looking at the end product.** This is not as easy as it may seem. As it takes **80 half-life cycles** to transmute 1 gram mole of a substance from the parent to its end product, the following sequence would be necessary to get one-half of a gram mole of Uranium-238 decayed to Lead 206. Uranium-238 goes to Thorium-234 in about 4,460,000,000 years. Then in about 5.585 years it becomes Protoactinium-234. In about 1.56 hours, it decays to Uranium-234. It takes about 20,320,000 years to go to Thorium-230. Then it would take 6,032,000 years to get to the next half-life cycle. When all is said and done, it would take from 4,460,000,000 to 4,486,482,156 years, 231 days, 6 hours, 48 minutes, and 24 seconds for half of the Uranium-238 parent product to transmute to the Lead-206 end product. A good example of this is like water falling from a cascade or flowing down a stream with

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

various bank widths. The longer the “half-life cycle” takes to be completed, the less water is coming to the next level. Think of this in another way—take a funnel and place 16 filters in it. Each filter represents the half-life of an element in the Uranium-238 isotope’s decay series. Make the filters with high half-life numbers thicker in proportion to the low half-life numbers. Make sure the filters are secured to the funnel so they will not fall out. Turn the funnel upside down and run water through the small end. The result will be a good example of what is taking place as the Uranium-238 isotope is being transmuted or disintegrated into the Lead-206 isotope. You could do this using the Thorium-232 decay series isotopes as your “filters.” (See the charts below.)

There is plenty of room for error in doing the calculation. In the first place, it is **hard to get a pure sample**. It can be contaminated in several ways. **Weathering** can erode away parts of the materials. Then you do not know how much of the end product or beginning **material** was there when things “were started.” Over long periods, many things can happen to mess up the materials you need to use in your calculations. Wind and water **erosion** can do much damage. Materials can be **leached out or imported in**. Some of the end products are gases, and can be **lost to the atmosphere**. For example, all half-life cycles discharge helium—an α particle is a helium center that produces Helium-4 by picking up two electrons. Not only does “nature” do some juggling of the materials, but also it is difficult to get all the end product together once you get some of it in the lab. The materials are in very small amounts. A loss of small amounts of the material throws the calculation “way off.” (One way to minimize this is to check the half-lives of all the materials in the entire cycle. The Uranium-238 cycle has 16 isotopes in its half-life series.) Do these verify your results?

As you can see from the above discussion, half-life determination is not a good way to calculate ages! It definitely is **not an absolute standard**. At best, it leaves much room for errors as well as some wild guesses. Going to the Bible is by far the best way to determine the beginning of things. What it does not tell you is not that important. You would do well to give your full attention and respect to what the Bible does tell you

. If your science is opposed to the Bible, you are doing sloppy science! You do not need to change the Bible! You need to change your sloppy science!

up. Some are saying something that you cannot understand. Some are stooping down. As you get closer still, you realize the object that fell from the building was a person. Now you are close enough to hear what some are saying. Some are saying to the object that is on the top of the building “Do not jump!” At this time, you figure it is a person. You hear the sound of sirens in the background. As you get to the gathered crowd, you begin to ask questions. Some tell you one thing and others another. Now you need some witnesses. You need to find who are good witnesses. You need to do what you can to help take care of anyone who may need help. You do not want to hinder getting help to the hurting person, or persons who are involved in this incident, which you have witnessed at a distance. You also realize others were closer to the event than you were and have a better perspective of what really happened. You need their help to get the answer to the question, “**What happened?**”—as well as other related questions. You want to be sure you ask the right questions. You want to know what the natural conditions are on top of the building to see if this was caused by, say, slick conditions. You want to know the reason for the people being on the roof. Answers to some of the questions are available by asking the people who are involved, but the one on the sidewalk is probably unable to help you now or perhaps never. As you look up, you see other people on the roof.

You ask yourself, could this be my big story? What does all this mean? It seems the more you find out, the more you need to know to write your “big” story. At first, you may have thought of this as being a simple suicide case, but when you get more involved, you realize it is more complicated than it looked. Several things could have happened; so you set up some possible solutions and check them out. You are now starting to take a scientific approach in preparing your story for the press. The answers you get that may help your curiosity or get your “big” story, and possibly help the people who were involved in the situation. When you try to help solve the problem, you are going from science to industry—from invention to inventory.

Counting problems—Some science has to do with **counting**. Things like the following would be counting problems for a scientific investigation. **How many wings does a particular insect have?** This is easy. You get the insect and count its wings. If you want to know if a trait of all insects is a certain number of wings, you would have a bigger problem. You would have to find a known characteristic of all the animals classified as insects to collect them, and then you would count their wings. This could get a bit complicated. It would be hard to get all of them

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

collected to count their wings. It would be time-consuming. It would take voluminous finances. It would take many people working together to help you with the project.

The way you do this project would be get a **representative sample** of all insects, count their wings and draw conclusions from your findings. This would get you into statistics and probabilities. You would not have an absolute answer. You would only have an approximation. The more of the total sample you used the closer to the truth you would come. If you found one insect that had something different than what you expected, you would have to go to the statement beginning with “some” or “most” rather than “all.” You could say, “Most, but not all, insects have wings.”

Not all counting problems are as “hands on” as this one. Say you wanted to **count all the stars in the Milky Way Galaxy**. You could not go out on a clear night and count them. Ninety-nine percent of them are not visible without the aid of a telescope. As a matter of a fact, even with your best telescope, you cannot see all of them. Here, you must make some basic **assumptions**. You must assume that the stars you see are a **homogeneous fraction** of the ones you do not see. (In other words, what you have is the same as what you do not have.) This would allow you to use a little math to calculate the total amount. If, on the other hand, this were a **heterogeneous fraction**, you would just be guessing about the total amount. You could assume that your galaxy is like another galaxy and work from that, but it would only be a guess. Therefore, you have no sure way of knowing how many stars are in the Milky Way Galaxy or the type of galaxy you are living in.

Going to the other extreme, you may want to ask, “**How many atoms are there in your desk?**” This would take on another problem. You would have to find the number of elements in your desk, the gram-mole weights of each element, and the number of atoms in a gram-mole. You can never find the exact number. You would only have a range of certainty of the correct number. Here, you would have something like the number of atoms in your desk to a range of certainty of +/- some number.

The rule is: The more important the result is, the more effort you spend on the problem to get as close as you can to the actual number.

The number of wings on insects is not a life-changing event. Who cares?! The number of white blood cells you have could be a life and death situation. More specialized work would need to be done to assure its accuracy.

Function problems—Much of what you do in science has to do with **function** problems. (How does it work?) This area can cover much territory. It can range from how a **cell** lives to how **electrons** move around in an atom. You find this in all branches of science: from astronomy to zoology. It covers such laws of science as the law of **gravity**, the laws of **thermodynamics**, and the like. You will need to know some math to understand this area of science, which is covered in Chapter 3.4. Say you want to know how **honeybees make six sided combs** rather than some other-sided combs. First, you know what honeybees look like—so you will not be looking at wasps or some other insect that makes six-sided combs. Then you go where the honeybees are found and watch how they make their combs. If you want to go further into your study, you might want to check the genetics of the honeybee to find out the reason they always make six-sided combs the way they do. Think about this for a while. What facts would you need to know concerning your question about honeybees? In working with this area of science, you need to determine whether the object is “alive” or not. You would need to know if it is self-determining or other-factor determining. Is it a primary or secondary function? What will stop it and what will keep it going? How can it be changed in a positive or a negative way?

Sense-centered problems—Some science is **sense-centered**. This has to do with your senses. How does it feel—soft, hard, rough, smooth? How does it taste? What is its sound? What does it look like—big or small, tall or short, thick or thin? What is its color? Is it near or far away? How does it smell? How do you feel about it? Is it beautiful or ugly, repulsive or attractive? In this area of science, you make **observations**. You would keep a **diary** of your observations and ask others to check them. Let us take **the Doppler Effect of light** as an example of this class of science. (The Doppler Effect of light is the rate of change in a spectrum as an object comes toward or goes away from you.) If the object is going away from you, the shift will go toward the red side of the spectrum and if it is coming toward you, the shift will go toward the blue side. This is directly proportional to the speed that is involved—the faster the speed, the more the shift; and the slower the speed, the less the shift. In using this, you must consider all the relevant motions. How are you moving? First, the earth rotates on its axis about 1,110 miles (1785.71 kilometers) per hour from west to east. Next, the earth is going around the sun at a speed of about 18.5 miles (29.76 kilometers) per second following the elliptic path. Then the solar system is going around the galaxy about 155.4 miles (250 kilometers) per second toward galactic longitude 90° in Cygnus.

Then the whole galaxy is probably rotating at an unknown speed and direction. The question that arises when you use the light Doppler effect to measure speed is, what is moving and to what extent? **All** these motions must be considered before you can interpret the data as you find it on the spectrum. Here, what you see is not necessarily, what you get.

3.2 Good Science Will Use As Many Senses As Possible!

3.2a. Introduction

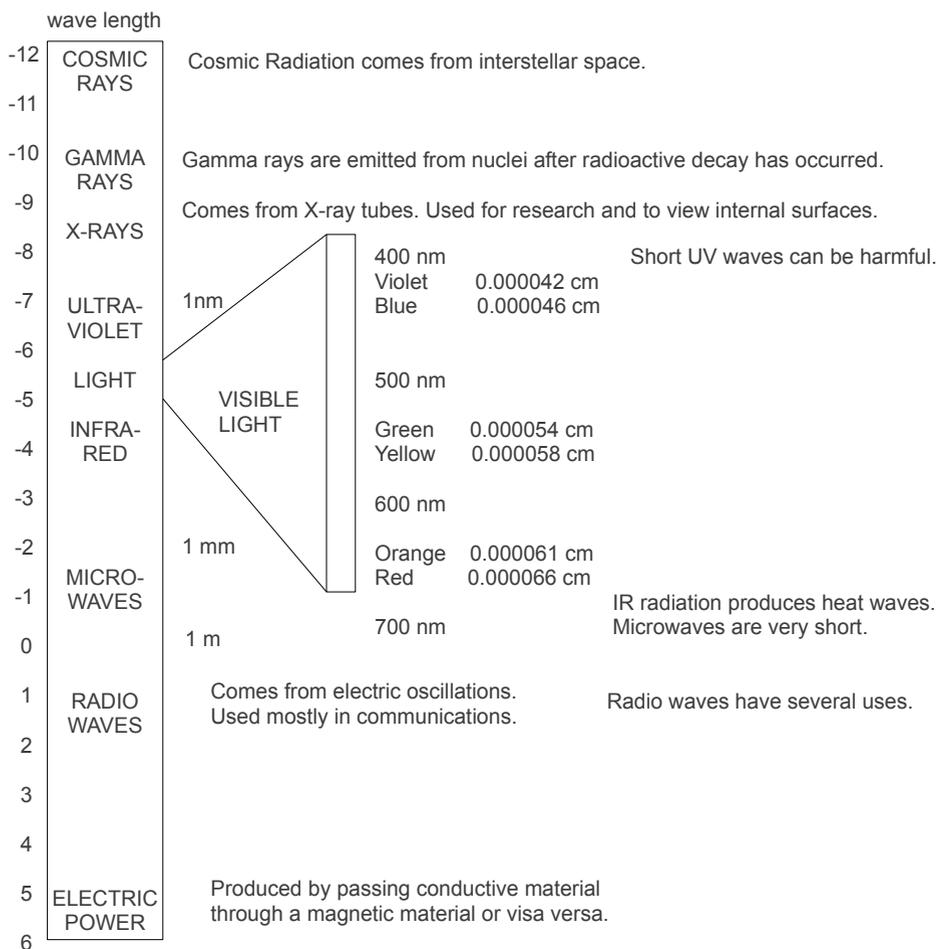
When it comes to using your senses, you have to work within the limits that are placed on you. Because this is the case, you cannot experience many natural phenomena with your unaided senses. In this section, I want to show what ranges you have available to you in the various senses. You will see how “fearfully and wonderfully” you are made. I will show how you can increase your ability to gain an understanding of nature, by constructing and using **instruments** to extend your sense perceptions. Much of the information in this section of this book is found in **MODERN COLLEGE PHYSICS**, 3rd Ed. By Harvey E. White, Ph.D., C. Van Nostrand Company, Incorporated. 1958.

3.2b. The sense of sight

Your eyes are well-crafted sensors that open to you a world of colors, contrasts, motions, ranges, shapes, sizes and vectors. Let us look at each of these separately.

COLORS There are three primary colors; red, yellow and blue, and three secondary colors; violet, green and orange. Then you have white and black. By combining the primary colors in various amounts, a modern computer can produce several million shades and hues. The colors you can see have wavelengths between 4,000 to 7,000 Å (1 Angstrom unit = 10^{-8} centimeter). When put together, colors can excite you to everything from awe to anger and rage, from joy to deep depression, or from intense action to a standstill. You understand psychedelic colors! You may not know that colors are used to describe different human temperament types.

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom



The Electro-Magnetic Spectrum

MOTIONS These can be interpreted as fast or slow, going away from or coming toward, circular or linear, or any other combination of these, or having no motion at all.

RANGES These would refer to distance. Is it close, far away or out of range?

SHAPES These are geometric shapes of either flat surface or 3D images.

SIZES Is it large, small, tall, short, thick or thin?

VECTORS These have to do with displacement, velocity, and acceleration.

SCALARS These have to do with volume and area.

CONTRASTS There can be a contrast of colors, motions, ranges, shapes, sizes, vectors and scalars as well as a contrast between light and dark. You can put the things listed above into many different combinations to gain much information about how your world functions. Thank your wonderful Lord for His goodness to you to give you this wonderful thing called sight. As you look at the world around you, remember and respect Him so that your wisdom and knowledge can grow on a solid foundation. See Appendix H for a list of Scriptures on wisdom and knowledge.

Here are a few of the devices you have to help you extend your sense of vision—the lens-based systems, geometric instruments, mathematical functions, carpenters' measuring tools. You can add to this list.

3.2c. The sense of hearing

This has to do with frequency of sound. As in sight, you only hear through a small “window” of the range of sound frequencies. We hear between 15 to 15,000 cycles per second (cps). Your range of hearing is probably close to this range. Some can hear lower than 15 cps or a little higher than 15,000 cps.

As you can see, if sound were a part of the electromagnetic frequency spectrum (Which it is not!) it would be at the bottom of the frequency range. Sight has a wavelength of between 4,000 to 7,000 Å (1 angstrom unit = 10⁻⁸ centimeter). The wavelengths of sound would be much longer, about 19.986 to 19,986.163 kilometers—1 kilometer = 0.621504 of a mile. This would make the wavelengths of sound approximately 12.421 to 12,421.481 miles. If such were the case, your hearing would be impossible. Your ears would not be able to transmit the sounds to your brain.

God chose to use a different system for sound. **Unlike light, which travels better without a transmission medium, sound must have a medium to function properly.** This medium can be a gas, a liquid or a solid. Each material has a different transmission quality. For example, air (at 0°C) has a velocity of 331 m/s (meters per second) (For each °C raised add another 61 cm/s or 2 ft/s; for each °F raised add another 33.528 cm/s or 1.1 ft/s.), hydrogen 1,269 m/s; water 1,435 m/s; alcohol 1,213 m/s; glass 5,000 m/s; and iron 5,130 m/s. In mi/hr, the velocities would be approximately: air 741, hydrogen 2,840, water 3,210, alcohol 2,652, glass 11,189, and iron 11,468. Wavelengths at 15 cps (cycles per second) and 0°C are: air 22.1 m (72.5 ft); hydrogen 84.6 m (277.7 ft); water 95.7 m (313.9

ft); alcohol 80.9 m (259.3 ft); glass 333.3 m (1,094.0 ft); and iron 342.0 m (1,121.3 ft). Wavelengths at 15,000 cps and the same temperature would be: air 22.1 mm (0.8696 inches); hydrogen 84.6 mm (3.332 inches); water 97.7 mm (3.7664 inches); alcohol 80.9 mm (3.112 inches); glass 333.3 mm (13.128 inches); and iron 342 mm (13.456 inches). There is no sound in a vacuum. In addition, some materials reflect sound better than others. Acoustics is determined by how sound is reflected from a given surface.

There are three things about sound: **intensity** measured in decibels, **pitch** measured by how high or low it is, **tone quality** measured by its harmony or lack of it. Intensity measures the amplitude of the wave and pitch measures its frequency. The intensity of the sound is inversely proportional to the square of the distance from its source. ($I = 1/d^2$) The amplitude of the sound waves at the threshold of audibility at 1,000 cycles is about the diameter of a hydrogen atom and gives some idea of the enormous sensitivity of the human ear.

Short waves travel in straight lines while long waves can bend around corners. A warm front under a cold one will cause the sound to go out into space, while a warm front over a cold one will bend the sound back to earth. When waves are at the same pitch, they will set up a resonance. When they are at different pitches, they will set up a beat. When a sound is moving, it will give the impression the pitch is higher when it is coming toward you, and lower when it goes away from you. This is the **Doppler effect of sound**. As the intensity of a pure tone, of say 300 cps, is increased, its quality will change and its pitch will decrease. At a higher frequency, when you increase the intensity the pitch will increase.

There is much more that could be said about this very interesting subject of sound and its effects. I would direct you to go to the library for further information. The book I have been quoting is worth your reading. Much can be gained by training your ears to hear the wonderful world God has made for you to enjoy. There are several places you can get information on this subject.

Some of the ways to extend your sense of hearing are the use of animals that have better hearing than you, PA systems and frequency modulators.

3.2d. The sense of smell and taste

You have four basic tastes—sour, sweet, salty and bitter. Smell and taste work together. With the aid of your sense of smell, you can detect many flavors. Several things in nature have distinctive tastes. By knowing these, you can identify a particular thing. Acids, for example, have a sour taste. If you know the molecular

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

structure of a particular smell or taste, you can trace it with a molecular analyzer device.

3.2e. The sense of touch

You can feel hot or cold, pain, textures and pressure. Each of these can be sensed in a continuous range from none to a great deal. You are limited as to how much you can tolerate. Too much will destroy the sense organ that registers it.

There are several instruments for this: thermometers, friction devices and pressure gages, to mention a few.

3. 3 Good Science Will Not Be Afraid To Be Tested.

Concerning this area of science, you need to do several things. **First, keep a detailed journal** of your project. In doing this, use language that is common to the scientific community as well as enough illustrations to make it understandable to the public. Do not try to hide your work in coded material that only you and a few others can understand. If a common person does not understand your material, work it over until he can. **Second**, let your work be examined by members of the scientific community. Follow this up by letting people apart from the scientific community give you their advice. **Third**, is there anything about your project that conflicts with the plain teaching of the Holy Bible? Is this a real conflict or just a bad interpretation? **Fourth**, go back over your work after you have done the above steps. **Fifth**, test your result many different ways: Does it fit all the material? Is it logical? Is it workable? Does it blend in with other areas of science related to it? How do you feel about it being tested? Do you feel as if you have to protect your work from others in and out of your field? Are you afraid it will “fall apart” when it is tested by others? Do you have any hidden agendas for putting forth this work? Is this just for you or will others benefit from it? **Sixth**, keep an open mind for more relevant data. **Seventh**, try to prove your finding incorrect by as many different ways as you or others can—this would be those who agree with you and those who do not. (Remember, God is always right. If the Lord God of Glory does not approve, do as He says!)

3.4 Good Science Will Test Scientific Formulas.

3.4a. Introduction

What is a formula? Webster's New Twentieth Century Dictionary; Unabridged; Second Edition; The World Publishing Company; 1960, says a formula is:

"1. a fixed form of words, especially one that has lost its original meaning or force and is now used only as a conventional ceremonial expression; as 'Very truly yours' is a formula used in letters. 2. any conventional rule or method for doing something, especially when used, applied, or repeated without thought. 3. an exact statement of religious faith or doctrine. 4. a prescribed method or prescription for preparing a medicine, a baby's food, etc. 5. a set of algebraic symbols expressing a mathematical fact, principle, rule, etc.; as, $A=\pi r^2$ is the formula for determining the area of a circle. 6. in chemistry, an expression of the composition of a compound (or a radical, etc.) by a combination of symbols and figures to show the constituents in their exact proportions." (The underlining is the author's.)

Formulas are very important in all areas of science. They are used in everything from probabilities to quantum physics. You cannot do science without an understanding of how they function. In addition, you need to know how to test formulas so you can see the difference between reality and fantasy.

3.4b. Some tests for scientific formulas

I. Does the answer have **realistic terms**? Do a reality test. In other words, does the answer give you real-life things you can work with in real-life situations?

II. Does **one side of the formula equal the other side**? If $G. F. (gravitational force) = 1/d^2$, it cannot be $G. F. = d^2/1$. If the first of these is true, the last one is false.

III. Does the formula **show a real happening**? It can only equal what has proven to be so by actual laboratory experiments. If it equals the one, it cannot equal the other. The law of gravity will not change even if you write a formula contradicting it. The formula must match the test results.

IV. Can the **terms be changed around without doing injustice to the results**? For example, if $E = mc^2$, then $m = E/c^2$ or $c^2 = E/m$ or $c = \sqrt{E/m}$.

V. Does the result **contradict a principle** that is **clearly revealed** in the Holy Bible? The Bible deals with real happenings. If it directly contradicts the Bible, you need to do a little work on it. Your formula is out of touch with reality. (See the definition of a formula in the introduction.)

VI. Can you make **accurate predictions** based on the formula?

VII. Do the predictions you made **stand true to all the data** that is before you?
At this point, make sure you are not lying to make your formula(s) look good.

3.5 Good Science Will Always Use Proven Formulas.

3.5a. Introduction

After you pass the formula through the sevenfold test listed above, you are now ready to use it to find out something about the universe around you. Only the formula passing the above sevenfold test should be used in your scientific investigations. Do not take anything for granted. Test it before you use it. If it does not pass the sevenfold test, pass it by.

3.5b Geometric formulas for areas, circumference of circle and volumes:

Area formulas for a:

Circle is $A = \pi r^2$; π is about 3.1416; r is the radius.

Cube is $A = 6S^2$; S is the length of one side.

Ellipse is $A = 0.7854 d_1 d_2$; d_1 is the short and d_2 is the long diameters.

Hexagon (6) is $A = 2.598S^2$; S is the length of one side.

Octagon (8) is $A = 4.828S^2$; S is the length of one side.

Pentagon (5) is $A = 1.720S^2$; S is the length of one side.

Rectangle is $A = lw$; l is the length; w is the width.

Sphere is $A = \pi d^2$; π is about 3.1416; d is the diameter.

Square is $A = S^2$; S is the length of one side.

Triangle is $A = 1/2bh$; b is the base line; h is the \perp height.

The circumference of a circle is $C = \pi d$; π is about 3.1416; d is the diameter.

Volume formulas for a:

Cone is $V = 1/3\pi r^2 h$; π is about 3.1416; r is the radius; h is the \perp height.

Cube is $V = S^3$; S is the length of one side.

Cylinder is $V = \pi r^2 h$; π is about 3.1416; r is the radius; h is the \perp height.

Pyramid is $V = 1/3\pi A^2 h$; π is about 3.1416; A^2 is the area of the base; h is the \perp height.

Solid rectangle is $V = lwh$; l is the length; w is the width; h is the height.

Sphere is $V = 4/3\pi r^3$; π is about 3.1416; r is the radius.

3.5c. Other formulas not in this book

It would be impossible to list all the scientific formulas used in the various fields of science. Many good science handbooks have formulas listed in them. Each science has various formulas it uses to test and establish its findings. These books have a wealth of information you will be able to use in your study of science. You will do well to go through these handbooks and manuals to get a feel for them. Back to the library you go! Before you go, finish the remainder of this chapter.

3.6 Good Science Will Be Honest in the Interpretation of the Data.

3.6a. Introduction

One of the traits of a Christian is his honesty. This cannot be over-emphasized in the area of science. You must be at your best in a world that does not always agree with your interpretation of the facts. These interpretations must be straightforward with a simple explanation of your findings. Let the data say what it logically shows you. Do not try to get it to say something that does not warrant a reasonable explanation with all your data. If your data does not correlate properly, keep studying it until it does. A little prayer, asking God to help you understand and present the data in an honest fashion, would be a good thing to do at this point of your adventures in “God’s Good Science Laboratory.” God is willing to be a partner with you in this area of your life. Let Him help you make an honest interpretation of the data you have before you. Let Him lead you to related material that will help you see the full scope of what you are investigating.

3.6b. How to interpret your material

The more complex the data, the **better records** you need to keep. This needs to be done for at least two reasons. First, you need to keep before yourself all relevant data so you can draw logical inferences from it. Second, you need to be able to show your material to others so they can test it.

Make **flow charts** from the material you have before you. Set the cause and effect material side-by-side. Set up logical sequence diagrams. Set up a logical syllogism that will explain your data. Make your charts go from the simple to the complex. Break up your data into small parts.

Try to **falsify** your conclusions. Be hard on yourself at this point. Do not leave any stone unturned. Go over your data to make sure you have not missed

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

anything. Ask yourself if there could be another explanation for these data. Would another explanation fit your data better than the one you are making? Can you **formulate** your conclusions into a realistic formula or formulas?

Get a **trusted friend** to listen to you as you go through the material and your interpretation of it. See if your friend can see any holes you missed. Do not get defensive if your friend starts picking away at it. Listen to what is being said. Try to see where your friend is “coming from.”

When you and your friend come to an agreement on the data, take it to the **scientific community**. Let them go over it with a “fine-toothed comb.” Then, you are ready to do your last step.

The last thing to do is to get your material and interpretation **published**. Go to a well-known, widely used publication to get your findings before the whole science community. Also, do not forget the common everyday citizen. Publish your material and interpretations in language anyone can follow.

3.7 Good Science Will Allow For Honest Differences In Thought.

What you have invented through your diligent study does not belong to you. God has allowed you to discover it so you can present it to the **larger community** that will be able to use it to make helpful products. You are not responsible for this part of the process. As a scientist, your work is completed. The thing you are responsible for is to make sure you are honest in your interpretation of the material and that you present it in a way that is easily understood by everyone. In addition, you are only one link in the chain that fulfills mankind’s dominion principle, which God laid down for you from the beginning. Let others be free to do their part of the God inspired work you have started.

CHAPTER SUMMARY

In this chapter, I have shown the characteristics of good science. I start out by showing you how half-life is determined. I showed you that half-life dating cannot give absolute ages. At best, by using half-lives you can only guess at the age. The longer the half-life, the harder it is to get a true reading. Then I talked about finding and using all the facts. In using the facts, you need to use as many senses as you can. Then I showed you what you should do to allow others to test your conclusions. Then I talked about testing formulas and how to use them.

There are a few formulas listed in 3.5b. This is only a small list of formulas that are in use in scientific investigations. I followed this with ways to keep your research honest. Lastly, I encouraged you to allow for honest differences of thought with your discovery, so others can do their part in fulfilling the dominion principle God has given you.

Chapter 3 Review Questions

1. What is the difference between good science and “science, falsely so called?”
2. Can absolute ages be determined by using half-life cycles? Explain your answer.
3. According to the half-life graphs below, what is meant by half-life cycles?
4. Study the Thorium 232 half-life cycle.
5. What three areas of science do you find in 3.1c?
6. How do these three areas differ?
7. Tell a little about the limitations of your senses.
8. Why is keeping a journal of your science projects so important?
9. According to 3.3 what are the seven steps in testing your scientific conclusions?
10. Name five tests for scientific formulas.
11. Where can you find other formulas not listed in this book?
12. Test seven formulas not listed in this book in seven areas of science using the five tests.
13. The introduction to Step 4, Chapter 1 gives an example of logical processes in a flow chart. What flow charts can you make that will help you make better interpretations of your scientific data?
14. What is meant by, “will allow for honest differences in thought?”
15. Why is the Word of God so important in doing good science?
16. Choose a science project and use the material in these first two chapters to come up with a working model that will show how one of the formulas you tested in question 12 functions.
17. Do a study of the various handbooks of the sciences.
18. Do a study of the chromosome numbers relative to the physical characteristics of the species. What are your scientific conclusions? Test your conclusions. Read Appendix J to help you with this project.
19. Is organic evolution a science or a religion? Explain your answer.
20. What are some common errors made in scientific circles?

“What? Know you not that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit which is in you, which you have of God, and you are not your own? For you are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God’s” (1 Corinthians 6:19, 20).

CHAPTER 4

BACK TO THE GARDEN OF EDEN FOR GOOD HEALTH

Going back to God’s garden will bring you good health!

1. Develop a loving relationship with God. Study your Bible, pray, witness for God, thank God for all things, learn to trust God for all your needs, and obey God in every area of your life.

2. Remove stress from your life by casting all your care on Him. Be careful for nothing; but in everything by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God. And the peace of God, which passes all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. Finally, brethren (brothers) whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things (Philippians 4:6-8). Casting all your care upon Him; for He cares for you (1 Peter 5:7).

3. Love people in thought, word and deed. Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamor, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: and be you kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ’s sake has forgiven you (Ephesians 4:31, 32).

4. Drink one ounce of pure distilled water for every two pounds of your body weight daily. This is a minimum amount—more in hot weather. Your body is over 70 percent water and your brain is more like 80 percent. Make sure you do not get dehydrated. It is very important for you to get pure water. Your best source of pure water is organic vegetable and fruit juice.

5. Get at least eight hours of rest a day. Rest more in stressful times. You must give yourself proper rest so your body and mind can rejuvenate itself. It is vain for you to rise up early, to sit up late, to eat the bread of sorrows: for so He gives His beloved sleep (Psalm 127:2).

6. Eat an all-raw diet of organic fruits, vegetables, seeds, nuts and herbs. And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat (food) (Genesis 1:29).

It is important that you eat your food raw and that it be free of all added substances. The ideal would be for you to have your own organic garden. You should sprout your seeds. Never heat any of your food over 107° F.

7. Exercise with a Rebounder or a good walking program. The only way you can keep your immune system healthy is through physical exercise. The Rebounder may be purchased from:

Laura Lee Ryan, Certified Reboundologist,
Telephone: (941) 743-6950 or
Needak Manufacturing, LLC
Website: <http://www.NeedakRebounders.com>.
Telephone: (800) 232-5762.

8. Get some sunlight once or twice a day. Sunlight is very helpful for your health. Do not overdo a good thing. You can “kill three birds with one stone” by taking a walk outside in a place that has a lot of plant life in it. This way you would get your exercise, sunlight and fresh air in its most natural form.

9. Breathe fresh air as much as possible. Fresh air is very important. You need a lot of oxygen and nitrogen. Ninety-six (96) percent of your nutrition comes from the air you breathe. Four (4) percent comes from the food you eat. You can do without food for days, but you must have fresh air every moment of your life.

10. Maintain a benevolent, thankful attitude toward God and others. Make a joyful noise unto the LORD, all you lands. Serve the LORD with gladness:

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

come before His presence with singing. Know you that the LORD He is God: it is He that has made us, and not we ourselves; we are His people, and the sheep of His pasture. Enter into His gates with thanksgiving, and into His courts with praise; be thankful unto Him, and bless His name. For the LORD is good; His mercy is everlasting; and His truth endures to all generations (Psalm 100). But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law (Galatians 5:22, 23). See also 2 Timothy 2:15-26.

11. Remove all resentments from your life by loving God and others. Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? Let him show out of a good conversation (conduct) his works with meekness of wisdom. But if you have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. This wisdom descends not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish. For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work. But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace (James 3:13-18).

12. Develop a regular schedule of times for food, rest and exercise. Your body has a biological clock. It likes to do things on a regular, orderly fashion.

13. Make sure you
14. Remove all processed foods from your diet. are having regular waste removal from your system. This will be automatic if you are doing the things listed above. When your body tells you to go, do what it is prompting you to do. Do not put it off. This will only mess up your regular cycle.

14. Remove all processed foods from your diet. These foods are packed full of harmful poisons that overwork your immune system. You need to maintain a Ph of 7.4 in your body. Animal flesh is very acidic. If the food is too acidic, your body will leach out the calcium from your bones. Cow's milk is for baby cows. You cannot improve on an all-raw-organic diet of fruits, vegetables, nuts and seeds. Soak the seeds to release their energy benefits. You do not need protein. You need amino acids so your body can make its own protein. You do not need to count calories. You need to think of enzymes, which are the live part of the foods you eat.

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Albert Earl Carter, in his book “The Cancer Answer,” gives you four things you need to know to keep your immune system healthy. They are: (1) cell food, (2) cell exercise, (3) cell environment, and (4) cell communication.

If you do the fourteen (14) things listed above, you will maintain a strong, healthy immune system, which will enable you to enjoy maximum health. You will not need to go to your doctor so he can drug, cut, or burn you back to “health.” You cannot improve on God’s program of good health.

This is a whole new way of dealing with disease. If you do these things consistently, you will develop a strong immune system and will be free of the diseases that plague most people today. There are several books, videos and other study aides listed in the Bibliography in the back of this book. May the Lord bless you as you learn how to take care of your wonderfully made body as well as your soul and spirit.

For more information you can get my book, “God's Prescriptions For a Healthy Society,” from Amazon.com or through my website at www.International-Lighthouse-Ministries.com. This little booklet has more detail and several recipes to get you started.

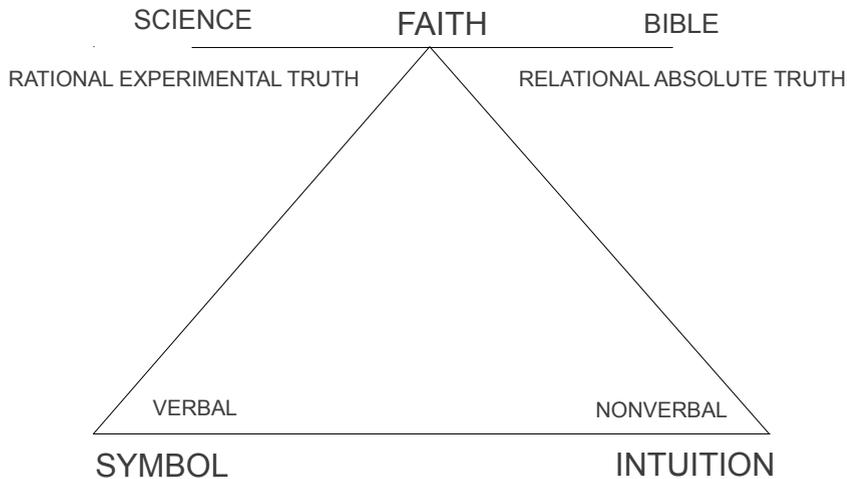
Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners (1 Corinthians 15:33). Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you (Titus 2:8).

CHAPTER 5

COMMUNICATING A CHRISTIAN WORLD VIEW

How do you see your world? To answer this question you need to look at the Faith-Symbol-Intuition Communication diagram shown below.



The Interactive Communication Triangle

In this diagram, you have **FAITH** at the top. Faith is what you assume to be true. The way you look at life. It is what you call reality. It is your value system. This is how you interpret the world you live in. It is internalized. It is spiritual in nature. This is the area of religion.

To the left of this diagram you have **SYMBOL**. Symbol is metamorphic. It functions with the senses of touching, seeing, hearing, smelling and tasting. This is your written or spoken verbal reality. It is physical in nature. This is the area of true science.

To the right of this diagram you have **INTUITION**. Intuition is emotional. This is how you respond to your reality, how you act and react in your world. The way you feel about your life's reality. It is your emotions expressed with non-verbal body language. This has to do with your soul functions. This is the area of philosophy.

Your communication can start at any of these points in the diagram, but to be effectively communicated to others it must go through either the symbol (verbal) or intuition (body language) side of the diagram. The communication triangle works as follows: 1. When you express your **faith through symbols**, you are formalizing your faith. In the religious realm, these are your creeds, testimonies, articles of faith. In the science realm, you have your theories, conventions, natural laws. 2. When you express your **faith through intuition**, you are internally experiencing your faith. In the spiritual realm, this is your assurance of faith. With science, this is your accepted logical proof. 3. On the other hand, when you express your **symbols through your faith** you are internally intellectualizing your belief system. As a Christian, these are your moral convictions. As a scientist, these are your accepted premises used to make logical conclusions. 4. Then, when you express your **symbols through intuition**, you produce the inspiration for your perceived reality. 5. When you express your **intuition through your faith**, you are rationalizing your accepted reality as you perceive it. 6. If you should express your intuition through symbols, you are conversationally (verbally) communicating your sense of reality to others. 7. When you **function on all three levels at the same time**, your perception of reality is well established throughout your whole being.

Follow with me one step further. Your **faith acts as a lens** for the symbols and intuitions you express in yourselves and with others. The Christian's point of reference for faith is the Holy Bible that sheds light on all areas of life! When you base faith on the Word of God, you see things as they are in the real world. The Bible is your "benchmark" to steer you around some of the common illusions and delusions in which you can get yourself lost if you rely solely on your natural instincts.

Note: All three areas of this interactive communication diagram function simultaneously. In other words, you cannot have one without the others. These three levels always work in perfect harmony with one another. The Holy Bible is your owner's manual that shows you how to best function in the daily activities of

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

your life.

Application for your Christian witness

As a Christian, you want to base your life on faith in the Lord Jesus Christ and His eternal Word. You want to stay clear of the false thinking that puts science ahead of God and His Word, the Holy Bible. When you are communicating your faith to others, make sure you know what they are basing their faith on and what your motive is for sharing your faith.

1. Is this person coming from a Christian or non-Christian worldview?
2. How strong is this person's convictions?
3. Is this person convinced he is right and you are wrong?
4. Is she willing to reason with you in her strong, as well as weak points?
5. Are you sharing your faith to bring glory and honor to God or just to win an argument?
6. Are you able to express your faith in a way this person can understand the benefits of your lifestyle over his? If not, find someone who can.
7. Are you willing to share your faith with this person with the understanding you are helping him get more out of his life?

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

STEP 5

Shows you how to do good science.
Reveals to you the causes of your moral and spiritual
suicide.
Gives questions and projects for your further study

**THE TRUTH OF GOOD SCIENCE CONTRASTED WITH THE
ILLUSIONS OF MODERN “SCIENCE, FALSELY SO-CALLED”**

INTRODUCTION

In this **step** of this book, you are going to look at good science as well as some of your present day illusions of “science, falsely so-called.” You will begin by looking at examples of good science and end with some examples of “science, falsely so-called.” You will be shown how to examine the journals and textbooks that you will be using, with some examples to help you see the difference between good science and “science, falsely so-called.”

Chapter 1 will show you how good scientific research has established the truth of special creation. Chapter 2 will give you some good results of good science. Chapter 3 will give you some bad results of “science, falsely so-called.” Chapter 4 will show you how to avoid the pitfalls of false science and thus help you develop a feel for good science.

When you accept God as the Creator of all things, you are well on your way to developing good science. This **step** of the book will help you enjoy the wonderful things God has made.

And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free (John 8:32).

CHAPTER 1

GOOD SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH HAS ESTABLISHED THE TRUTH OF SPECIAL CREATION

1a. Introduction

Those who have practiced the principles of good science have done much good. These people have shown, without a doubt, that the Bible is reliable—that it is a book of factual information completely free from error. It is the sure foundation of your faith in a Living and True God of the universe. From Genesis 1:1 to Revelation 22:21 you have a true account of God and His dealings with the human race for time and eternity. You have also found that you live in an interesting universe with many secrets that can be unlocked by sound scientific investigation.

In the following, you will find reasons to question the pseudoscience of evolution. You will be given a reason to believe in the special account of creation found in the Bible. You will realize you have the scientific facts on your side. You will find you can be a good scientist and believe the entire Bible.

I want to encourage you to read books written by Christian scientists. The late **Dr. Henry M. Morris** has written many books on the subject of good science. He was the founder of “The Institute for Creation Research.” Their address is: P. O. Box 59029, Dallas, TX 75229; website: www.icr.org. This is a good Christian organization. You will enjoy their material, and get much help from them. **Nathan Wood’s** book is very interesting. **Dr. John Raymond Hand** is an excellent writer. If you have been educated in an evolution-based science course, you need to deprogram yourself by accepting the Biblical world view. You can do this by studying scientific materials authored by Christians. The author’s article on “**The Mythology of the Evolutionist**” at the end of this chapter is very helpful.

Are you ready to learn the truth about Special Creation?

1b. The Bible's account of special creation is more in line with the facts of science than is the theory of evolution.

Dr. John Raymond Hand, in his booklet entitled "Why I Accept the Genesis Record," gives you seventeen (17) barricades evolutionists must get through to make their theory stand the test of science. They are as follows:

"BARRICADE NUMBER 1: The question of life itself.

BARRICADE NUMBER 2: The gap between the animal and vegetable kingdoms.

BARRICADE NUMBER 3: Life cannot be reproduced except by life.

BARRICADE NUMBER 4: The formation of species lines.

BARRICADE NUMBER 5: Why are there no transitional forms?

BARRICADE NUMBER 6: What stopped the evolutionary process?

BARRICADE NUMBER 7: Embryos do not propagate.

BARRICADE NUMBER 8: The sterility of hybrids.

BARRICADE NUMBER 9: The question of reversion to type.

BARRICADE NUMBER 10: The unexplained, but admitted, failure of evolution at unexpected and unpredictable times.

BARRICADE NUMBER 11: Conflict of the theories of evolution with available records.

BARRICADE NUMBER 12: The coexistence of types.

BARRICADE NUMBER 13: The constant number of species.

BARRICADE NUMBER 14: The question of method.

BARRICADE NUMBER 15: The preservation of species lines.

BARRICADE NUMBER 16: The mathematical difficulty.

BARRICADE NUMBER 17: The desperate attempts of evolutionists to crush all opposition to their doctrine."

These are honest questions. Before you swallow the evolutionists' propaganda, you should get some answers to these questions. Note: Dr. Hand was an evolutionist before he accepted the Genesis account of special creation.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Dr. Henry M. Morris, in his book “The Remarkable Birth of Planet Earth,” pp. vi-viii, made seventeen (17) scientific statements, which back up special creation as found in the Bible. They are as follows:

1. The Bible clearly teaches that all things were created in six natural days several thousand years ago, and all other Biblical interpretations of the creation account contain many irreconcilable contradictions with both science and Scripture.
2. There is no demonstrated fact of science which cannot be satisfactorily correlated with this simple and straightforward Biblical record.
3. There are many amazing scientific insights in the Bible which long preceded their actual discovery by modern scientists.
4. No fact of actual observation has ever confirmed the general theory of evolution, as distinct from those minor variations which are known as the special theory of evolution.
5. All facts of observation support the concept of the original creation of distinct kinds of organisms, each with a genetic ability to develop into many different varieties but never into a new kind.
6. Both the present world of living organisms and the fossil world of dead organisms exhibit the same clear-cut gaps between kinds, with no transitional forms between.
7. Man has never created “life in a test-tube”, nor is there any evidence that non- living substances have ever evolved into living organisms, either in the past or in the present.
8. Inheritable and novel changes (mutations) which take place in organisms today have always been observed to be harmful in some way to the organism in its natural environment.
9. The tremendous complexity and order of the world and its plants and animals can only be explained by intelligent planning, not by random process of chance variation and natural selection.
10. The basic laws of nature, to which all natural processes must conform, are laws of conservation and disintegration, as the Bible teaches—not laws of innovation and integration, as evolution teaches.
11. The entire fossil record can be explained better in terms of cataclysmic destruction of all the ecological zones of one age than in terms of evolutionary development of changing worldwide floras and faunas through many ages.
12. There are more natural phenomena indicating the earth is very young than those indicating it is old, and all the latter can easily be reinterpreted in terms of young age.
13. Belief in special creation has a salutary influence on mankind, since it encourages responsible obedience to the Creator and considerate recognition of those who were created by Him.
14. Belief in evolution is a necessary component of atheism, pantheism, and all other systems that reject the sovereign authority of an omnipotent personal God.
15. Belief in evolution has historically been used by their leaders to justify a long succession of evil systems—including fascism, communism, anarchism, nazism, occultism, and many others.
16. Belief in evolution and animal kinship leads normally to selfishness, aggressiveness, and fighting between groups, as well as animalistic attitudes and behavior by individuals.
17. Belief in evolution leads usually and logically to rejection of the trustworthiness of the Bible and, therefore, failure to appropriate its promises leading to salvation and eternal life.”

Note: Dr. Morris was an evolutionist before he accepted the account of special creation as stated in the Bible. This book is must reading for all those who take the Bible seriously, and are interested in being good scientists in this day and age.

There are many other people from all areas of science who are taking their stand for special creation. You can find these books and articles in many places.

1c. God's special creation reveals His eternal power and Godhead.

Over 50 years ago, Nathan R. Wood wrote a very interesting book. He called it "The Secret of the Universe." In this book, he shows the unifying principle of the universe to be the Trinity. The trinities of space, time, matter and us are clearly explained. Then he puts it all together in a most surprising fashion. This is a real "eye-opener" for the Romans 1:20, 21 scripture. It would be worth your time to get a copy of this book and study it.

1d. Christian theology and natural sciences must complement each other.

You have found that God and science work hand in hand. To know and love God makes you better qualified to use your science for the good of humanity. When you put God first in your life, you use what you learn from your scientific investigations in a constructive way. Your science is only as good as your moral and spiritual foundation. Those who want to leave God and His Holy Word out of their scientific studies have done much harm. Those who have worked in partnership with God as they have followed their scientific studies have done much good. Without a sound Christian theology, many "mad scientists" have been turned loose on your world to bring much suffering and disillusionment to many innocent people.

1e. The Bible is to be interpreted literally.

God means what He says and says what He means. In places where symbols are used, you can find the explanation for them in the context or somewhere else in the Bible. In some instances, you can figure it out by using common sense or good deductive reasoning. In other instances, you need to be spiritually minded to get the meaning. The Bible can be best understood when it is given a literal interpretation. If you cannot understand a part of the Bible, do not try to explain it away by making it a "Babylonian myth" or "faulty reasoning of an uneducated mind." If you are convinced your mission is to discredit the literal interpretation

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

of the Bible, then be honest enough to quit calling yourself a Spirit-filled Christian.

CHAPTER SUMMARY

In this chapter, you have looked at some of the important “discoveries” by some leading Christian scientists who have confirmed the validity of special creation. You will do well to study their findings. There is a whole new world awaiting you, which can be discovered by studying the science of the good scientists of the past and the present.

Chapter 1 Study Questions

1. What is the leading myth in the science community?
2. What are some of the leading discoveries of Christian scientists?
3. Study some of the problems of the secular scientists that have been solved by Christian scientists.
4. How do you know the earth is only thousands of years old?
5. What is the general attitude of the good scientist toward God and His Word?
6. What is the reason for the physical universe?
7. Does the Christian scientist limit the advancement of science?
8. How does good science differ from bad science?
9. How has the theory of evolution hindered science?
10. Why does the Christian scientist reject evolution?
11. How does an acknowledgment of special creation aid you in doing good science for the advancement of the human race?
12. Where does the atonement fit into doing good science?

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

The Mythology of the Evolutionist

By Howard E. Wright, Route 1, Box 316, Exeland, Wisconsin 54835.
(Published by the Bible-Science Newsletter, Minneapolis MN 55406, Volume 19,
No. 5, May 1981. Used by permission.) This is the 2008 revised version.

Ever since man has been upon this planet, he has asked the following questions:
How did I get here?
Where am I going?
What is life all about?
Why am I here?

Science, philosophy and religion all have their answers for these questions. Evolution and its implications seem to be the best answer the natural man can give. In its early days, evolution was a philosophy. Later, it was proclaimed as a science. With today's studies, it is becoming clear that it is really a religion. You may ask, "Now wait just a moment! What do you mean by that?" I mean, by the actions and reactions of its followers, it pertains more to a religion than a science. In science, a person's ideas are open to questioning, testing and evaluation. In a religion the attitude is: "God said it, I believe it and that's enough for me."

The attitude of several evolutionists is: "Evolution has taken place and you had better believe it." Some have gone so far as to proclaim that everyone who does not believe in evolution is "ignorant and unlearned." They act as though evolution has been proved beyond a shadow of a doubt, that all facts are on their side and if a person only knew the facts, he would surely "see the light." Anyone who would throw doubt on the idea of evolution is up for ridicule and verbal abuse. Some evolutionists feel so sure of their theory, they refuse to accept any facts against it. Consequently, to them, nothing that is against evolution is a fact. Some have even gone so far as to say that the Bible teaches evolution. Naturally, if the Bible teaches it, it would be unchristian to go against it. Hence, it goes! The battle continues with much confusion, "loud shouts, and fist waving." One says the other is badly wrong, and both vowing to hold on to the end—whatever the end is. This is a "horse of a different color."

Evolution has its traditions and these are sacred:

You're a bum if you don't think you came from the scum, brother. After all, Anaximander set you straight on that about 600 B.C. I dare you to fight against the faith of our fathers!

Evolution has its saints:

By faith, Thales saw everything coming out of water, which he acclaimed to be the original substance.

By faith, Anaximander proclaimed the original earth to be mud. By faith, he declared life arose out of this mud. By faith, he saw man produced by a shark.

By faith, Anaximenes saw man and animals being spontaneously generated out of mud by air condensing and rarefying its surroundings.

By faith, Empedocles saw parts of animals being formed and coming together by chance. By faith, he saw some animals adapting while others died off because they were not fit to survive. By his wonderful "observations," he became the father of evolution.

By faith, Buffon denied creationist "theory" and the idea of fixity of species. By faith, he acclaimed the earth to be much older than 6000 years.

By faith, Huxley proclaimed evolutionary change to be "an incontrovertible fact."

By faith, Lamarck stated his findings on use and misuse.

By faith, Stensen proclaimed fossils to be of an organic origin.

By faith, Charles Darwin left the ministry and the faith of his fathers. He boarded the H.M.S. Beagle, not knowing where it would take him. He climbed mountains, risked his life in disease-ridden areas, and looked at life around the world to seek out the answer to the origin of life.

They were often tempted to give up their faith. They wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins. Being destitute, afflicted and tormented, they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth. They all died in the faith, looking for a better hope. Their god was chance. Their hope was the "super race."

Evolution has its rituals:

Hitler sacrificed 6,000,000 Jews on his altar of the "Super Race." Songs of praise are sung to evolution around the world. Many offerings are given to it in "research projects." People have laid down their lives to defend it and your

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

schools propagate it to your children.

Then evolution has its “gospel.

They preach to you that the “Great Society” will ride in on mutations sculptured by the survival of the fittest. There will be peace and safety for all—those that are left, that is! So, if you are worried about the way the world is, take courage. In another million years or so, life is going to be a lot better than it is now.

In order for life to originate by chance, two things must have taken place: (1) life was spontaneously generated from non-organic material, and (2) life has developed from the simple organism to the complex ones. The evolutionist has given you several ways this **could have happened** over the years. These have all turned out to be myths. In the remainder of this article, I would like you to explore with me these myths of the evolutionist.

The Myth of Spontaneous Generation

To have life originating from non-living material by accident or chance is a very complex problem. To understand the complexity of the problem I would like you to consider the following facts:

Miller and his colleague, Orgil, in their book, *The Origins of Life on the Earth*, give you at least eight assumptions that must be made for life to have arisen by chance or accident on your planet. To complicate things further, they give you a list of 11 things that would have to be considered in a theory about the evolution of the genetic code. For 11 independent events to take place you are looking at a probability of one in 39,916,800. This is only one of the eight events that would have had to take place if life started on this planet by accident. For a protein of 1000 amino acids to form by accident, you are looking at a probability of one out of $4 \times 10^{2,596}$ —that is one in 4 with 2,596 zeros after it!

To further complicate this problem of getting life from non-life, you have the situation when things are left to themselves to organize at random, they disorganize rather than organize. Leaves do not fall on trees; they fall off. Water does not flow upstream; it flows downstream. The greater the organization, the more energy it takes to keep it organized. When you see the complexity of a single cell organism, you begin to see this problem in its true perspective.

Let us take two examples of one-cell organisms to show their complexity. Our

examples will be the Escherichia Coli bacterium, the human colon, and the paramecium animal, which can be found in well water.

The E. Coli bacterium is procaryotic in that it does **not** have a well-defined nucleus. It is anaerobic and has a mesophilic temperature optimum of 39o C (102.2o F). It is about two μm ($1\mu\text{m} = 0.000039$ inch) in length with a DNA length of 1100 to 1400 μm . It doubles itself about every 20 to 30 minutes in culture and about every 12 hours in the human colon. It moves at about 16.5 μm per second (about 8 cell lengths per second) by means of peritrichous flagellar which are wrapped around each other and around the cell body and extending away from the direction of motion. Its average DNA M.W.(molecular weight) is about 1010. Viruses, called bacteriophage, attack them. They have a very complex cell wall and are gram negative. If you would like to know more about E. Coli, I suggest you consult a good book on microbiology, like Thomas D. Brock's book *Biology Of Microorganisms*.

The paramecium is eucarotic in that it **has** a well-defined nucleus. There are about nine species with a size ranging from 125 to 250 μm . They have a diploid number of 16. They can reproduce in two ways: (1) asexual, with the cell dividing by binary fission in a transverse alignment, as the micronucleus always divides by mitosis and the macronucleus by amitosis, and (2) conjugation, which is a complex system of temporary fusion of the cells with a nuclear exchange followed by a complex binary fission in the transverse alignment. It is a carnivorous ciliate, which ingests bacteria and small algae. It has a well-defined cell wall. The food is taken in through the mouth where it is digested in a very complex way in food vacuoles. The osmotic pressure of the cytoplasm is higher than that of the medium so that water enters the canal through the pellicle and the walls of the food vacuoles. This water is taken up by the radial canals and pumped out through the contractile vacuole about the same way your kidneys secrete urine into the bladder. CO₂ and urea are dissolved in the liquid when it leaves the cytoplasm and finally passes to the outside. They are motivated by cilia and are negatively galvanotropic. If you would like to know more about paramecium, I suggest you get a good book on protozoa, like T.L. Jahn's book *How to Know the Protozoa*.

The natural question would be "How could 'simple organisms' like these come into being by accident?" The answer any thinking person would give is that it could never happen by accident! They look more like the work of a Master Architect!

The Myth of the Missing Link

If all is just an accident, then there should be many missing links. As a matter of fact, you should be tripping over them every time you turn around. You should see all kinds of odd creatures in natural life.

The truth of the matter is, no one has been able to produce one bona fide missing link in the hundreds of years of their search. As an example of the mad search for one, I would like you to examine the evolution of man on his horse.

The horse showed up on the scene about 54 million years ago, with teeth and feet something like ours, about the size of a spaniel dog. Hi ho, Eohippus! No, he is too small. As time went on, Eohippus lost one of his four toes and got to be the size of a collie dog. Hi ho, Mesohippus! No, he is still too small. About 10 million years ago or so, your horse lost the protection of the woodland and had to figure out how to make a fast getaway from his enemies, so he figured if he ran on his tiptoes, he would have more leverage. By doing this, he finally developed hooves. He got to be about the size of a deer and could outrun anything on the plain.

This caused him some problems. His neck was too short to eat the grass and his teeth were the wrong kind. He survived by growing a longer neck and better teeth. Hi ho, Merychippus! No, you monkey, he is still too small! About this time, your ancestor, Australopithecus, showed up on the scene. He didn't know much. He just monkeyed around with pebbles to make crude hand axes. It seems humans learned war before they learned anything else! Australopithecus' son thought he could do a little better than his dear old dad, so he changed his name to Homo erectus and started to make shaped hand axes. About 500,000 years ago Homo erectus' son changed his name to Homo sapiens and we humans have been getting better at making war equipment ever since. Hi ho, Equus! There goes Homo sapiens riding Equus toward the western sky! If you believe this story, I think the horse has better sense than you do.

If you really want a laugh, check out the material used to make "restorations"—a bone here, a tooth there, etc.

The Myth of Mutations

The trouble with mutations is, you do not have very many of them and what you do have, for the most part are harmful to the total organism. The more organized

the organism, the more likely the mutation will be a harmful one.

There is a more obvious problem with mutations which I feel should be taken into account. It is, if mutations are the answer to how you have simple organisms evolving into complex ones, there should be some kind of a correlation between the chromosome number and the species as it appears on the classification chart. There is no such correlation. The chromosome numbers go from one (1) in the bacteria to 104 in the skate and carp. Mammals range from 22 for the Virginia opossum to 78 for the dog. Birds range from 60 for the house sparrow to 85 for the blackbird. Reptiles range from 22 for the spiny fence lizard to 58 for the loggerhead turtle. Fish go from 18 for the northern pike to 104 for the carp. Insects range from six for the mosquito to 34 for the firebrant. Protozoa range from three for the trypaposome to 28 for the heterotrichous ciliate. It would be hard to believe the cat, the Gila monster, the India cobra, the South American lungfish and the diving beetle are all related because they all have 38 chromosomes; or that the guinea pig, the horse and the black-tailed gull are related because each has 64 chromosomes.

If chromosomes are the packages for the genes, and to add or to drop one of these packages causes dramatic changes in the organism, then why isn't there some correlation between the chromosome number and the physical appearance of the related species? How is it that the South American lungfish has 38 chromosomes while the West African lungfish has only 34? If man is related to the monkey, how is it that man has 46 chromosomes and the Rh monkey has only 42? How is it that the house sparrow has from 54 to 60 chromosomes, the blackbird has from 60 to 85, the sea cucumber has 28 to 36, the claw worm from 20 to 30, and the freshwater sponge has from 10 to 12?

The above material shows that it is impossible for speciation to have occurred via mutations. This is a very serious problem for the evolutionist and demands some serious investigation. This would show that animals have progressed independent of one another.

Furthermore, it has been stated that once you get the genetic code, the probability of a sudden origin of a new species by simultaneous mutations of numerous genes is something on the order of 10,400—an impossible probability!

I do not have the time or space to show the mythology of common origins, evolutionary throwbacks, speciation and absolute time which the evolutionist has given you as the gospel truth. Now I would like to show how the mythologies of the evolutionist have set you back in your normal, social, spiritual and intellectual

development and what you can do about it.

The Alternative to the Mythology of the Evolutionist

The mythology of the evolutionist has set you back by giving you a theory, which is based totally on faith rather than on the facts. To say life originated from non-life, is to state an article of faith which is illogical, unnatural and untestable. There is one thing for sure. Life is more than all its component parts. You can find all the components of life in a corpse, but this is not life.

Furthermore, to go through a planned lab process to obtain the components of life would be an indication that life is an undertaking that requires a designer or organizer. The Christian calls this Person **God**. To show that life **could have** been created in a lab if you knew the proper steps is no proof that God did not create the existing life, any more than showing Jones could make cars proves Ford didn't make the Model T. History proves that Ford did make Model T's. Biblical history tells you, "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth" (Gen. 1:1). The truth is that life could never have happened by accident even if it were given 10 trillion years in which to do it. God planned and created all things according to His wisdom and purpose. This is the reason that species are well defined. Is it not about time you stop parroting the myth of the evolutionist and examine the facts for yourself?!

The myth of the evolutionist has left your world without a purpose, hope, faith or morals. In short, it has demoralized you. For example, to tell your children they came from monkeys and then to teach sex education in your schools without guidance, is telling your children to act like monkeys from which they originated. It is to tell them they have no souls any more than do animals. If this is the case, there is no good reason why you should not abort your babies if you do not want them.

Furthermore, if you want to mug or rape your neighbor to fulfill a desire, it is "all right." If you came into this world by accident, all life is an accident and there is no purpose for living. Could this be why you have so many suicide cases today among your children and youth? They have created a seven-headed monster and have turned it loose on your helpless children! It is destroying all us.

If you happened by accident, there is no reason for a moral code. Could this be why so many are going by the philosophy, "If it feels good, do it?" Could this be why STD's are at a pandemic stage? Could this be why crime has been rising for

decades? I think the answer to these questions is an emphatic yes! If life is an accident, then life is hopelessly at the mercy of beastly people who will bring you to your doomsday in a nuclear holocaust. If there is no plan from the hand of a faithful and loving Creator, life is most miserable and unbearable. The entire human race is plunged into despair by this anti-God, anti-Christ religious system!

Because evidence is mounting that evolution is a religious faith (rather than science) which has brought your world into a state of terror, many people are saying you need to look for an alternative, which will better fit the facts before you.

There is an alternative to the mythology of the evolutionist, which fits in well with the facts. This alternative is the concept of special creation, which is expressed in the Judeo-Christian Scriptures. Unlike the faith of the evolutionist, which borders on presumption, your faith is based on facts. Christians simply believe that God created all things spiritual and material. This faith gives you the answers to the basic questions in life and shows you how you are to live with your God, your fellowman, and the world around you.

Christians know where they came from and where they are going! If you are a Christian, you know the heavens, the earth and all that exists, come from the hand of your Creator God. You know that God created you in His image and likeness. You have been specially created with a bright future as you fellowship with your Creator God. By trusting and obeying Him, you know you can have heaven on earth as well as throughout eternity. You can live in harmony with Him and all His creation as you accept His redemption and follow His laws.

Furthermore, Christians realize who they are! If you are a Christian, you realize you were born with a sin nature. This sin nature is against God and can only be handled properly as you yield to God's plan of redemption through the finished work of Jesus Christ's death, burial, resurrection and ascension. This is shown clearly in John 1-3 and Romans 1-10 in the Christian Bible, God's Word to mankind. If you would accept this, you would have fellowship with God and would live at peace with your fellowman. The trouble is, you have had a lot of pseudo-Christianity that is little more than a mock performance, which has brought shame, sorrow, disgust, disgrace and disillusionment to millions of honest souls.

Examples of true Christianity are few and far between. Rather than salvation by faith, salvation by works is taught. The true way is salvation by faith, which brings forth works of love as a **natural** overflow of a life, which is **participating**

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

in salvation through Christ Jesus. Not everyone who professes to be “born again” or “saved” is really in an experience as I am explaining. So who are the true Christians? You are sinners whom Christ Jesus came to save **from**, not **in**, your sins and give you a “spiritual tune- up” that makes you love your enemies as well as your friends. This can be realized by turning from your sins and accepting Jesus as your personal Savior and Lord.

Christians know why they are here and what the correct moral character is! If you are a Christian, you know you are here to bring honor and praise to God and give loving, caring service to others. You are here to live at peace with one another. If everyone were a true Christian, there would be no need for a police force or an army. Wars would cease. There would be no need for anyone to despair. Everyone would feel loved and needed. Joy and peace would be within everyone’s life. The money and energy used on war and “peace-keeping” equipment could be used for Biblically-based research and development programs to rid your world of hunger and disease. You could walk your streets at night without fear. Everyone would consider his neighbors as brothers and sisters. There would be no problem with sex sins. No one would envy his neighbor for any reason. Ecology would be a thing of habit rather than forced. Heaven and earth would be one.

In closing, I would like to give five suggested ways you can free yourself from this monster of the mythology of evolution and bring peace and joy to your sin-ridden world.

1. Quit teaching evolution in your educational system. This has only served to demoralize you. You can do without this nursery rhyme! Life needs to be based on facts, not fantasy. Anything as degrading as this, has no place in a God-fearing society.

2. Teach the special creation account in your educational system. Show how it fits in with the facts of scientific research. You have organizations which could provide you with textbooks and materials.

3. Bring Bible-reading and prayer back into your educational system. This provides you with a moral basis for behavior. It restrains wrong behavior as well as showing the correct one. It shows you how to love God and to respect your fellowman.

4. Uphold God’s rightful place as Lord of creation.

5. Work toward His complete will being done upon this earth as it is in heaven by (a) having national days of prayer on a regular basis for praising God for His

blessings, as well as for requests for help in times of national and international crisis, and (b) encouraging other nations to follow God as taught in the Judeo-Christian Scriptures.

Turn back to God and be the Christian nation your forefathers meant you to be. It is not too late. God loves you and wants to use you in these last days to bless the world. God will forgive if you ask Him. There is hope! Wake up America! These five simple steps will put you well on your way toward being the great nation you started out to be!

At what instant I shall speak concerning a nation, and concerning a kingdom, to pluck up, and to pull down, and to destroy it: if that nation, against whom I have pronounced, turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil that I thought to do unto them. And at what instant I shall speak concerning a kingdom, to build and to plant it; if it do evil in my sight, that it obey not my voice, then I will repent of the good, wherewith I said I would benefit them (Jeremiah 18:7-10).

If I shut up heaven that there be no rain, or if I command the locusts to devour the land, or if I send pestilence among my people; If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn aside from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land (2 Chronicles 7:13-14).

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. you cannot serve God and mammon (worldly riches) (Matthew 6:24). And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom you will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land you dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD (Joshua 24:15).

CHAPTER 2

SOME GOOD RESULTS WHEN USING THE GOD HONORING PRINCIPLES OF GOOD SCIENCE

2a. Introduction

Many of the great scientists of years gone by were God-fearing men and women. In this section, I want to give you some examples of the kind of good that has come out of these people's work. I cannot give you a full account of these works for lack of space.

2b. The Constitution of the United States

I have in my possession a 3-volume set entitled "God and Government" by Gary DeMar. In this set, Gary shows you the spiritual background that brought about your Constitution. He shows you the faith your early founders had in the Bible. He shows that even though not all your Founding Fathers were "born-again Christians," they did have a high regard for God and His Word. Many of your Founding Fathers came to America to find religious freedom. Study Gary's material to get a better understanding of your Christian heritage.

2c. The American School System

Your early schools were called grammar schools. The reason they were started was to teach people how to read the Bible. They taught reading, writing and arithmetic. They taught the Hebrew and Greek languages so people could study the Bible in its original languages. They taught the Ten Commandments. They usually started their day with prayer, the reading of God Word, and the Pledge of

Allegiance to the flag of the United States of America. The students were disciplined when they got out of order. This system of education gave you some wonderful people who did much good in the early days of your nation. A careful study of an American history book dated before 1920 would be an eye opening experience for you.

Much good is being done in the many Christian schools and universities of your nation today. A person gets a much better education in one of these schools, compared to the ones that do not honor God and His Word. What's more, children who are being home-schooled are doing much better than those attending government schools, which do not allow for God and His Word to be taught.

2d. In the health field and working with the sick

People who love God and His Word control many of the hospitals of your nation. These people are against abortion and mercy killings. They have a high regard for human life even at the point of dying. They are not only treating the physical, but also the emotional and spiritual needs of their patients. (Get a list of hospitals from your library and see how many of them are controlled by Christian organizations.)

CHAPTER SUMMARY

In this chapter, I have shown you three areas where good science has promoted the well-being of your society, which has been the envy of the rest of the world in the past. Sad to say, much of this has been eroded away by the "science, falsely so-called" teachings of your day.

Chapter 2 Study Questions

Are you ready to search out the truth in these three areas?

1. What good has good science done for your form of government?
2. What good has good science done for your school system in the past?
3. How is it being used in your Christian schools today?
4. What good has good science done for you in the area of public health?
5. In what ways has good science raised your standard of living?
6. What has good science done to elevate the place of women in your society?

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

7. How has good science encouraged you to develop a good moral standard?
8. Were your forefathers God-fearing people?
9. How is a good moral standard to be developed?
10. Study the three areas listed above from a good science point of view.
How does this differ from your present situation?
11. Why can you not have good science without good people?
12. Why are you not reaping more of the good benefits of the good science that has been so much a part of your past?
13. What are you going to do to help bring your nation back to God?

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things (Romans 1:22, 23).

CHAPTER 3

SOME BAD RESULTS WHEN USING THE FALLACIES OF “SCIENCE, FALSELY SO-CALLED”

3a. Introduction

Anytime you throw God’s Word to the “winds of change,” and insist on doing science solely with your sin-cursed mind, you are opening yourself up for all kinds of sins of the body, soul and spirit. Many people have done just that. They have refused to follow God and His ways and have beguiled many. The following list of woes could be greatly multiplied. Only God knows all of the wickedness that has been brought on your world by those who have “done their own thing” in the science community. You, who have a mind to take good advice, take heed. This should give you enough inspiration to do good science for the good of others and yourself.

Are you ready to wade around in a cesspool of moral and spiritual ruin dumped on you and your family by the atheistic-humanist movement?
For your safety, put on your “gas mask” before entering!

3b. Wars and rumors of wars

“Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He that sits in the heavens shall laugh: the LORD shall have them in derision. Then shall He speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure. Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. I will declare the decree: the LORD has said unto me, you are my Son; this day have I begotten You. Ask of me, and I shall give you the heathen for your inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for you possession. you shall break them with a rod of

iron; you shall dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel. Be wise now therefore, O you kings: be instructed, you judges of the earth. Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the son, lest He be angry, and you perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him" (Psalm 2).

"From whence come wars and fightings among you? come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members? you lust, and have not: you kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: you fight and war, yet you have not, because you ask not. you ask, and receive not, because you ask amiss, that you may consume it upon your lusts. you adulterers and adulteresses, know you not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God. Do you think that the scripture says in vain, The spirit that dwells in us lusts to envy? But He gives more grace. Wherefore He says, God resists the proud, but gives grace unto the humble. Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. Draw nigh to God, and He will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners; and purify your hearts, you double minded. Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness. Humble yourselves in the sight of the LORD, and He shall lift you up" (James 4:1-10).

War in the heart of man works its way out into war with his neighbors. You cannot have peace until the Prince of Peace is ruling in the heart of everyone. When your science excludes the God of the Bible, it does nothing for the human heart. The two scriptures above show you the natural results of warring against God along with its remedy.

3c. Moral collapse

"Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness (sensuality), Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance (discord), emulations (jealousy), wrath, strife, seditions (dissension), heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance (self control): against such there is no law. And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

another” (Galatians 5:19-26).

When the “scientists” explained away the inbred sin, which is in every unsanctified heart, your generation was left without a defense to hold back the moral corruption that is so much a part of your society today. Daily, you are horrified by the violence that comes to you via the “news.” The answer for this is a Savior Who can change you; One Who can help you do what is right.

When our nation stops listening to the voice of the godless scientists, and starts listening to the Spirit of God, you will find a new day dawn in your moral climate. People will again love and respect one another. God will heal our land as love, joy and peace reign supreme.

3d. Economic collapse

Consider these facts! Much time and money are spent on things that do not matter, which could be used for great good. Money is spent on “scientific research and development” that has nothing to do with the good of the human race. One of the big issues today is the environment. You are told it is going to fall apart if you do not do something to “save” it. An unjustified amount of money is spent to “clean up the environment.” Much of this is nonsense. I would counsel you to investigate their “findings” before you get too heated up over this issue. You do not need the federal government involved in this “problem.” This is an individual responsibility. Local authorities can best attend to local problems. You see only the tip of the iceberg. I would urge you to look at how the university grants, which are given out for “science projects,” are used. Then check out the corporate grants and see how they are used. Research how the foundation grants are used. You will find many unscientific projects, which are draining your economy. Another area of study you might want to investigate is the reports in the “Science Journals.”

Then you have all the “help programs” that are helping other nations come up to your standard of living. Study your foreign aid policy. Look at all your tax money your government has given other nations that have used it against you and even their own unsuspecting, innocent people. The United Nations is a good example of your tax money going for unconstitutional “policing” operations.

Much of this is being done in the name of common decency and “advancing democracy.” I would submit you look into how much of your national debt is due to these “science projects.” You will be surprised at what you discover.

3e. Human degradation

If you are a mere rational animal, and not a special creation as the Bible so clearly tells you, then you can treat others with contempt. You can do everything to them from life-threatening experimentations, to wiping them out because they are “inferior” to you, to exploiting sex in your advertising campaigns. (If the feminist movement wants to clean up the degradation of women, why won't they do something about this one?) You can step on everyone else “to get to the top.” You who are promoting the theory of evolution and amoral “sex education” have much to answer to God concerning the low-grade treatment people are being given in the name of science. This worldwide plague has been promoted by the atheistic-humanist movement for generations.

3f. Spiritual reprobates

“And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenant- breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them” (Romans 1:28-32).

False scientists are at war with God. They do not want Him to interfere with their activities. Such people are without anything that is of a God-fearing spiritual nature. Their spirit is under the control of the spirit of this age (Satan). They do not have a personal loving relationship with God and His people. They refuse to listen to sound reasoning. Associating themselves with the Christian faith does not make them Christians in practice.

3g. Sinister schemes

Among those listed as sinister schemes are Hitler's plans for a “Super Race” and the deliberate plans of the atheistic-humanists to tear down the morals of your nation. There is a worldwide, highly organized conspiracy in operation to do away with anything that has to do with God and His ways. Great hosts of people are promoting this conspiracy, directly or indirectly.

3h. Abortion on demand

This evil has done irreversible damage to your world. It has given you a low-grade view of life. It has inspired the very thing it professes to be fixing—child abuse. It has opened the door for greedy people to take advantage of your misdirected youth. Many useful people have been taken out of your society at birth before they had an opportunity to do you any good. It has encouraged women to practice irresponsible sexual acts that have demoralized them. It has brought the judgment of God down on your nation for their mistreatment of His little ones.

Abortion is based on the “science, falsely so-called” idea that the embryo is not human until it is born. In this way, they rationalize that what is being aborted is not human. They reject the Biblical view that clearly shows human life begins at conception. They have done a good job of dividing the “Christian” community on this issue.

3i. Sexual perversions

Scriptures like 1 Corinthians 6:9, 10; Galatians 5:19-21 and Revelation 21:8 condemn sexual sins along with the other evils of ungodly lifestyles of your day. All forms of sex outside the marriage union of one woman with one man for life are condemned in the strongest terms in the Bible. (Perhaps this is the reason these people want to do away with the Bible?)

When you are told you are a product of evolution and that you are just glorified animals, the door is open for you to act like an animal. Then, to make matters worse, the “sex education” that is being taught in your school is encouraging your youth to act the way their sexual drives lead them. This is tearing down your family structure.

Advocating alternate lifestyles carries sexual perversion even further. You are told homosexuality is not a sin, but is a birth defect; that you should not condemn these people’s lifestyle, but just accept them as they are because they cannot help it. You are told you should not try to convert them because this would do them great harm. This is what the false scientists are promoting throughout your land. **DO NOT BELIEVE A WORD OF THIS. HOMOSEXUAL ACTS ARE SEXUAL PERVERSION, PURE AND SIMPLE!**

“If a man also lie with mankind, as he lies with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be

upon them” (Leviticus 20:13).

“Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenant-breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them” (Romans 1:24-32).

3j. Disregard for God

There is a general disregard for the things of God. There is no fear of God. You are encouraged to call on God only when you get yourself into troubles you are unable to get out of on your own. Do you have any real love for God and His work? Do not be ashamed to admit it.

Have you noticed how hard it is to get people out to a prayer meeting or a Sunday evening service? Many church programs could function very well without God’s help. Many of the churches are little more than country clubs. Much of the preaching has nothing to do with the will of God being carried out in your everyday life. Much of what passes off as “Christian worship” is a form of godliness without the power. You do not hear very much preaching from the pulpit on the separation of yourself from the materialistic, the sensuous and the demonic. Sin is considered a bad word in your day and age. Would you rather call it a sickness? Not all churches are dedicated to serving the LORD Jesus Christ, but there is a Satanist church functioning in your nation dedicated to serving the devil.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Much of the above is inspired by a general disrespect for God's Holy Word. You even have people in your "holiness churches" that are ripping out pages of the Bible. They are using their modern-day "knowledge" to discredit the Biblical creation account. These self-styled "intellectuals" tell you the flood was only local, when the Bible clearly states it was worldwide. They are quick to point out the inconsistencies that exist between the Bible and science. Naturally, they would consider "science" the correct position. Such people would feel compelled to re-interpret or reject the Bible on the grounds of what "science" has discovered, thus making reason more valid than revelation. May I counsel you that if you have someone like this in your Christian college or university, you do God a favor and dismiss such a person immediately.

3k. Social collapse

There is a general disregard for old-fashioned social values, resulting in the erosion of the family. The community spirit is gone for the most part. You can live in a community for years and not even know your neighbor's name. The typical family of your forefathers is almost a thing of the past. Crime is on the rise and has been for years. Very few places in your nation are safe either day or night. Young children are committing "adult" crimes. Children are killing children. Children kill their parents, and parents kill their children. Some churches are not taking a stand against the evils of the day, while promoting such things as abortion on demand, homosexuality, free sex, and a sinning religion.

3l. Many souls in hell that should be in heaven

With so much deception going on many people have been led to disregard their need of a Savior Who longs to set them free from their sins, give them an abundant life here on earth and the hope of eternal joy in heaven. They feel they will do just fine if they are "good" to others. They never repent of their sins and let God save them from their sins. They never take time to be holy. They only do what is convenient to their lifestyle, and when it comes time for them to die, they have no hope and drop into a devil's hell. They should be in heaven today, but their pastor told them there was no deliverance from sin, and they believed his lies to their own remorse as they burn in hell. Sad to say, if you are one of these false teachers and continue in the way you are going, many others will join them that should be in heaven.

3m. Idolizing science

“Science” is “god” for many people today. “Science” is their savior and coming king. To them, “science”—not the living God—is going to bring in the golden age. They are not looking for Jesus to come and make things right. God does not set the moral standards for their lives. God is not the one who is going to comfort them in their time of need. “Science” will do these things for them. Even though many of these people would not be willing to admit it, they are practicing atheists. They are counting on “science” to give them all they need and want. They have no God to glorify, no heaven to gain, no hell to shun or peace to satisfy the longing of their sin-sick soul. If you are one who is bowing at the feet of “science,” you are doing it to your own shame and disgrace. Turn from this right now and let Jesus be your Savior and King!

3n. The god of pleasure

“This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, Traitors, heady, highminded, **lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God**; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away” (2 Timothy 3:1-5). (The bold emphasis is added by the author)

This is their version of Psalm 23

“I am my own Shepherd! I shall always want. I try to find green pastures. I lie down beside many troubled waters. I restore my soul with false hopes. I lead Myself in paths of self-gratification for My Own name’s sake. Oh, yes, when I walk through the valley of the shadow of death I will fear eternal judgment. For God is not with me. God’s rod and staff are a constant rebuke to my life of self-gratification. I try to have a feast in the presence of God’s people. I put on a good front with a shining face. My hypocritical life is empty! Surely rebuke and judgment will follow me all the days of my life, and I will dwell in the house of the eternally lost forever.”

3o. Inordinate affection

This means people do not have natural affections. Their affections are perverted. The natural affection of parents for their children is to protect them from harm. They would give their own lives to protect their young. They would never think

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

of harming them in any way. They would never think of aborting their babies. They would not harm their family in any way. They would protect their family name. They would love people and use things. Such is not the case in many people's hearts and homes today. They are "out for number one." They do not care what they have to do to "get ahead." Is the 2 Timothy 3:1-5 Scripture a good description of you? I hope not!

3p. A medical system that has turned greedy

Drugs, surgeries and radiation do not cure diseases. A strong immune system cures diseases. Much of what your present medical system is "practicing" is destroying your immune system. There is a natural way to build up your immune system. This simple approach is based on following the health principle that is in the Bible. It is "going back to the garden of Eden." I have outlined the element of good health in STEP 4, Chapter 5 of this book. Many people are being cured of all sorts of diseases using this method of strengthening the immune system.

With all the propaganda you have thrown at you everyday telling you how wonderful your medical system is, why is our nation getting sicker by the moment? Yes, the United States of America is one of the sickest nations in the world! If what I am saying is not true, then why are your medical professionals insisting sick people keep coming to their office to be drugged, cut up in mutilating surgeries or burned with radiation? So they will be able to pay for their high-fashion lifestyles? If this is not so, why do these people continue to insist on maintaining the present system of "health care?" Why are they protecting themselves by discrediting those who want to help you take charge of your own health? Pure and simple—the natural way has no money in it. Seeing many people enter the medical profession to get rich, it is no wonder they would raise all kinds of objections to you who are taking charge of your own health. Keep it simple—they are stressing your physical system needlessly for their own greedy gain.

Doctor—Is your greed for material gain bringing untold suffering to the people you are professing to be "curing?" Are people dying needlessly from cancer, high blood pressure, strokes, heart attacks, and the like? Are people crippled for life that should have experienced complete healing? Think about it! Does the end justify the means? What is more important to you in this life: people's health or propping up a failing medical system? You must decide what you will do with this medical dodo bird. If you really want to help people get well, may I suggest you join the God-fearing people who are bringing healing to the physical ills of this

world through natural means.

3q. Persecutions of good science people

The “science, falsely so-called” crowd will not allow other views to enter into the consciousness of others. They are not content to spread their corruption around the world. They are actively involved in cutting down people who do not agree with them. They will stop at nothing to make their competition look like the “bad guys.” They will lie, steal, cheat or do whatever it takes to make their way look good. You can be assured that they will treat this book with contempt. They cannot stand to be told they are wrong. How long are you humanists going to continue to preach tolerance, while you remain the most intolerant of all people?

3r. A greed for power rather than an energy problem

The wicked will not let anyone or anything get in the way of their bid for world domination. Anyone who attempts to stop their sinister plans is opening themselves up for ruin.

CHAPTER SUMMARY

In this chapter I have “blown the whistle” on some of the bad results of “science, falsely so-called.” I have given a partial list of the harm that has been done by this crowd. Their ungodly actions and attitudes toward God and His ways have corrupted your whole society. Any good this crowd has done has probably been borrowed from the good scientists. You would do well to stay clear of their counsel. Read Psalm 1 again! May the Lord rebuke them before they destroy everything that is good and holy in our world!

Chapter 3 Study Questions

1. Where did the “science, falsely so-called” crowd go astray?
2. How extensive is the destruction that has been caused by them?
3. What is the basic principle of the humanist movement?
4. What have they done to elevate your moral and spiritual well-being?
5. What is the remedy for the harm that has been done by them?
6. What areas of your life are touched by this God-hating crowd?
7. What does Psalm 1 tell you to do? Are you doing this?

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise? Where is the scribe? Where is the disputer of this world? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men (1 Corinthians 1:19-21, 25).

CHAPTER 4

HOW TO DEVELOP “GOOD SCIENCE” AND STAY CLEAR OF THE “SCIENCE, FALSELY SO-CALLED” SYNDROME

4a. Introduction

Your problem is, you have learned too many rotten things by rote. If you are learning absolute facts by rote, this is the way to go. Much science fits into this frame of reference. The problem comes when fantasies are treated like facts. When you follow these fantasies by rote, you are “out of your mind.” The Bible tells you not to be “conformed to this world” but rather to “be transformed by the renewing of your mind.” Good scientists do good thinking. They do not follow the leader like blind sheep to the slaughter. They are the real nonconformists!

Now I will show you how to use this book to do “good science.” I will take all the previous chapters, and show how they are used in real life situations. I will show you how to test material you are exposed to. I will show you how to use the sound reasoning of “good science.” Actual material will be used to show you the contrast between good and bad science.

Come with me back into God’s Good Science Laboratory!
Be sure you take a bath before you enter. We do not want any of that
atheistic-humanist contamination in God’s Good Science Laboratory.

4b. Accept the entire Bible as God’s Word.

This is the first step in doing “good science.” Seeing God created the worlds and placed in you a mind that is able to comprehend many of the mysteries of this

great universe, there should never be a conflict between science and the Bible. If there is a conflict, your science is wrong. You need to do a little more research and let God be God, with you being His student. This is the only way you can expect to get to the truth in any area of science or religion.

4c. Develop a keen mind that is inspired by the Holy Spirit.

One of the things the Holy Spirit does for you is lead you into all truth. Step 4, Chapter 1 shows you how to develop a sound mind. There is no other way of developing a sound or keen mind for truth. Study Step 4, Chapter 1 carefully along with Appendix I to keep from being tricked into believing something that is foreign to the Bible or sound logical reasoning.

4d. Do not allow yourself to have “hidden agendas.”

Many people have their minds made up before they start their projects. They arrange their data to “prove” their preconceived mindset. They will do about anything to keep you from discovering their agenda. These people are not scientists. They are usually very dishonest. They may even falsify the data to fit their pet hypothesis. You can find much of this in the “science, falsely so-called” camp. DO NOT BE ONE OF THEM!

4e. Use all the facts that are related to your project.

In the same way scripture can be taken out of context, so can science. By using all the facts, you keep yourself clear of this pitfall. You learn the full meaning of the subject under question and develop a greater appreciation for God’s wonderful creation. This also helps you stay away from “hidden agendas.” Step 4, Chapter 3.1 shows you how to do this.

4f. Seek the council of God-fearing people.

This goes along with the idea that “only good people can do good science.” You are not on an island by yourself. You need all the help you can get from God and others.

“Without counsel purposes are disappointed: but in the multitude of counselors they are established” (Proverbs 15:22).

See also Psalm 1:1, 2 that says, “Blessed is the man that walks not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor stands in the way of sinners, nor sits in the seat of the scornful. But his delight is in the law of the LORD; and in His law does he

meditate day and night.”

4g. Follow the basic assumptions of good science.

These are found in Step 4, Chapter 2.

4h. Go through Step 4, Chapter 3 to get guidance for good science.

This chapter has much helpful material in it. Use it freely.

4i. Be assured you are doing good by being a good scientist.

You will find much opposition as you go about being a good scientist. Even people who profess to be “Christians” will oppose you. Do not let this discourage you. You will do much good as you follow the guidelines established in this book. In time, your work may be recognized. It is not your responsibility to please misdirected people. It is your obligation to do the work of God as set forth in His kingdom mandate to you. God will only lead you to do the good and right thing.

4j. Be alert to the leading of the Holy Spirit in your life.

You are a partner with God in your science. You cannot separate your “science life” from your Christian life. You are to let God lead you in every area of your life. If God says no, do not go there. He is the Lord of your science as well as your devotional life. Remember, you must keep Him Lord of all, or He is not Lord at all.

4k. A “good science” book examined

There are many “good science” books and articles in print on the book stands and in libraries across your nation and around the world. You will be surprised at the wealth of good information you find in them. These people are not irrational idiots. A careful study of their materials will make you a better thinker as well as a better Christian.

I am reviewing Paul M. Steidl’s book *The Earth, The Stars, and The Bible*; published by Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Company; Phillipsburg, New Jersey 08865, in 1979.

You will notice right away in Paul’s book he freely uses the Bible as his “benchmark” for his science work. He makes no apology for this. He has a thorough knowledge of astronomy as well as the Bible, and freely ties the two

together. You will find a good example in his book of how the Bible and science can work together—as a united whole—to bring the truth out of the natural beauty that is all around you. You will see how God is glorified through His creation.

He states scientific facts in a clear manner. He does not try to work the facts into his science, but lets the facts speak for themselves. He asks the right questions and attempts to answer them in a logical, straightforward manner. He does not distort the facts by going beyond what are reasonable conclusions with logical deductions. He admits what he sees as possible problems for his conclusions and lets his readers draw their own conclusions. He is not going beyond what the facts are showing him.

He has a very good scripture index as well as a subject index in his book. It would be to your advantage, to go through these indexes, and study how the scripture is used with the publicly available facts of science.

If you are interested in seeing a good example of “good science,” this book comes highly recommended to you. Read and study it with full assurance of its value to you and your quest for God’s will in your life’s work. Take the tests of “good science,” which are given to you in this “7 Steps Out of Darkness Into God's Glorious ” book, and see if you find a clear example of “good science” throughout Steidl’s book.

41. A series of “science, falsely so-called” articles examined

For an example of “science, falsely so-called,” I am taking the special issue of the “Scientific American” magazine entitled Life in the Universe. This is a wild attempt to persuade a gullible public into believing the theory of evolution is a proven fact.

Let me say at the start of this review that there are many good scientific articles in this magazine. I really enjoy the advances that are being made in the sciences. I find much helpful information in it. I would advise you to sign up for this magazine if you are interested in the field of science. However, do not accept everything in it as “good science.” Use what you have learned in this book to evaluate its “science.” Disclaimer: If the false claims of this magazine, or others like it, cause you to doubt God and His Word, find a wastepaper basket to dispose of them quickly!

As I have stated previously, origins cannot be determined by science. When you get into origins, you are getting out of the field of science and into religion and/or philosophy. Religion and philosophy are just as real as science; however, you

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

must be guided by a different set of rules when you expound on them. Religious and philosophical truths are relational, rather than rational. They have to do with your soul and spirit functions, rather than your mind. As such, when you try to use the rules of science to expound upon religious and philosophical truths, you are in trouble. You cannot do without the religious and philosophical truths, but do not pass them off as “good science.” See the Communication Diagram in Step 4, Chapter 5 of this book for a full explanation of the relationship between science, religion and philosophy.

On page 41 of this special issue of the “Scientific American” magazine, you find an offer of 20% off for the industry or education institution that purchases 50 or more of them. So right up front, it is being passed off as science. As a “come-on,” you will find a list at the end of this page of the “leading scientists” who are presenting articles on various subjects. You are told you will “learn what science currently knows.” I would propose you do a little thinking before you accept any of this material as science. You will see much “science, falsely so-called” in this jungle of “intellectual fantasies.”

The **first article** is entitled “Life in the Universe” by Steven Weinberg. Right away, he is in trouble. He has no way of scientifically proving his deductions. The things he is trying to explain cannot be reproduced except in the imagination of a mind that is trying to make sense out of the facts that are before him. Any mind, trained or untrained, can do the same thing. Your guess is as good as his! If you use the guidelines in this book, your deductions will be better than his!

The **second article** is entitled “The Evolution of the Universe” by P. James E. Peebles, David N. Schramm, Edwin L. Turner and Richard G. Kron. When you get into the subject of evolution, you are not into science. You are into a godless, naturalistic, humanistic religion that has prompted many human atrocities throughout human history. According to the Bible (God’s revealed Word), there never has been anything evolving into something else. Man has always been man. Fish have always been fish. Birds have always been birds. To imagine anything else makes good heathens, but not very good scientists. It does not matter how many people believe in evolution or how many degrees they have behind their names. It makes a big difference how close you are to the facts of the Bible as well as nature when you are doing your science.

The **third article** is entitled “The Earth’s Elements” by Robert P. Kirshner. It is stated at the beginning of this article that “the earth and its inhabitants were

created by earlier generations of the stars.” Naturally, this is only a wild guess based on the assumptions of naturalistic evolutionists. It appears as though these “scientists” get bolder in their statements as the years go by. There was a time when they would say such things as “perhaps,” “it appears to be,” “it could be,” and the like. Now they come up with bold statements they know they cannot prove scientifically. They trust their years of brainwashing the public with this kind of propaganda in all areas of science, to work wonders in putting all the “thinking people” to sleep. In time, they become “blind leaders of the blind.” Their only problem comes with the people like us who do not fall for this bunch of nonsense. God forbid you ever fall for this false line of reasoning.

The **fourth article** is entitled “The Evolution of the Earth” by Claude J. Allegre and Stephen H. Schneider.

The opening statement of this article is “The formation of this planet and its atmosphere gave rise to life, which shaped the earth’s subsequent development. Our future lies in interpreting this geologic past.” This is a bold statement with no scientific backing. It is amazing what kind of things spiritually bankrupt imaginations can produce. The pictures are pretty, but the logic is ugly. You would think that after years of training, a person could come up with something better than this rubbish. Why should you walk as a tin soldier to the beat of the vain philosophies of men when what God gives you is so much better?

The **fifth article** is entitled “The Origin of Life on the Earth” by Leslie E. Orgel. (Let me say right here, that the men and women who are writing these articles are not stupid. They are very intelligent and for the most part very honest people. I have said some strong things here. However, if these dear people can be deceived by the humanistic propaganda that is passed off as science, then how much more should you, a common person, be alert lest you also be pulled into it? Many of you, who are reading this book should take heed to what is being said here.) If you could go into a laboratory and produce a few or all the components of life, which Leslie has claimed to have done, this would not mean you have discovered how it was accomplished at the beginning. Note: You can find the components of life in a dead body! Life is more than all its components. Even if you created life in the laboratory, you could not be sure that the way you created it was the way God did it in the beginning. Therefore, this whole thing is a useless exercise when it comes to proving that life had to be the way you created it in a laboratory setting. Furthermore, if it takes intelligence to create life in a laboratory setting, then it makes sense to believe it took intelligence to create life in the

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

beginning. That Intelligent Being I call the true and living God.

The **sixth article** is entitled “The Evolution of Life on the Earth” by the late Stephen Jay Gould. You would think with all the learning Stephen had he would have known the difference between science and religion. Such is not the case. When he entered into origins, he had to develop a philosophy of origins that is based on how he viewed life. He had to ask himself about the general nature of things, as, are they all explained by natural laws, or is there an intelligent force behind nature that has brought all this into being out of nothing? Are the natural laws eternal or created? Can the natural laws produce the order you see all around you or, left to themselves, will all nature be chaos rather than a cosmos? To Stephen, it would be a cosmos. To the facts before you, it would be chaos. Do you believe the facts, or Stephen? Stephen was another dear man who had been deceived by the humanistic propaganda. He could have done much more good if he would have used his high intelligence for the Glory of God rather than the glory of man.

Do not get me wrong. I am not trying to be unkind. It is just a real shame to see such a waste of time and energy by so many good people who—if they had had a little better training—would have been much more useful to our human race than they have been up to now. God help these dear people to free themselves from this entire “science, falsely so-called” web. Stephen summed it up in his last book, *I Have Landed: The End of a Beginning in Natural History*, page 25. He wrote, “**But I also can’t help wondering what comes next!**”¹ (The bold is done by the author.)

The other articles in this series carrying the same false assumptions could be classified as “science, falsely so-called”—“The Search for Extraterrestrial Life” by Carl Sagan and “The Emergence of Intelligence” by William H. Calvin.

The last two articles in this series have little to do with origins and will have to be weighed on their merits of sound reasoning and Bible morality. Try your hand with these.

“Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. For in him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily. And you are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power: In whom also you are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: Buried with him in baptism, wherein also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who has raised him

from the dead” (Colossians 2:8-12). (The underlining is done by the author.)

CHAPTER SUMMARY

In this chapter, I have summarized the parts dealing with good science in this book. Then I have given a review of a “good science” book and a list of “science, falsely so-called” articles having to do with origins. I have shown the folly of trying to use science to determine origins. I have lamented the sad conditions of those who have given their lives to prove, by science, what is only a vain, humanistic, religious philosophy of life. My heart has gone out to these dear people who have been caught up in this diabolical web. I have given fair warning to those of the Christian community who are tempted to follow their example. I have closed with a Scripture that commands you to “beware” of putting your faith in the wisdom of men and the world rather than in the Lord Jesus Christ.

Chapter 4 Review Questions

1. What is the first thing a good scientist must keep in mind?
2. How do you go about developing a keen mind?
3. What should you do about “hidden agendas?”
4. What happens if you do not use all the facts?
5. Why should you seek advice from God-fearing people?
6. How can Step 4, Chapter 3 help you develop “good science” projects?
7. Why should you follow the basic assumptions of good science?
8. What should be your motive for doing good science?
9. Why is it so important for you to have the Holy Spirit’s leading in your life on a moment-by-moment basis?
10. What makes Paul M. Steidl’s book “good science?”
11. Why are so many modern day “scientists” promoting evolution?
12. Are origins and questions of WHY and WHY NOT within the realm of scientific investigations? Explain your answer.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

STEP 6

A drama that shows the marriage of The Holy Bible and True Science

THE MARRIAGE OF THE HOLY BIBLE AND TRUE SCIENCE IN REVEALING GOD AS CREATOR AND REDEEMER OF THE UNIVERSE

INTRODUCTION

This part of this book is looking at the Holy Bible and True Science as they reminisce about their marriage. They will tell about their “courtship” and “marriage ceremony.” They will give you a moment-by-moment account of their time with each other down through the ages. Let us listen in on them as they and their companions share their experiences with us. NOTE: The following is a play that shows how the Holy Bible and True Science work together to bring honor and glory to God. Act I has eight scenes, Act II has one scene and Act III has three scenes.

ACT I

(We join our couple, Holy Bible and True Science, sitting on a swing on the front porch of the house where a special gathering of the household of God is preparing themselves for the “reaffirming of their wedding vows” which is about to take place. Both are dressed in their wedding garments, which are very expensive-looking, and very pretty.)

Scene 1 - The Groom Is True Science

Holy Bible: “You are fantastic! You are so handsome. I am so glad you are a part of my family.”

True Science: “Thank you! I have kept my fruitfulness through the ages of eternity. Working for your Father, The LORD of Glory, keeps me from aging.”

Holy Bible: “We have been together before my Father created the Universe. You have been working for Him from the very beginning.”

True Science: “Yes! I have been working for your Father before the foundation of the world.”

Holy Bible: “My Father had you helping Him determine how the universe would be constructed. Then you worked for Him during the Creation week. You helped Him create a being in His own image. You have worked with my Father to get all His wonderful Creation working as it does to this very day.”²

True Science: “I have enjoyed every minute of it.”

Holy Bible: “You are the one who helped my Father know what to do when Lucifer led a third of the angels in a rebellion against Him.”

True Science: “That was a very sad day in your Father’s household. There was nothing for us to do except throw them out of heaven. There was no hope of reconciliation. They were set on taking your Father’s throne.”

Holy Bible: “You were the one who helped us know how to bring the human race back into our fellowship when Adam and Eve fell for the deception of Lucifer and his angels through the suggestions of the evil serpent.”

True Science: “Yes, I was there. Jesus, your Father’s Only Begotten Son, decided to give His life for their redemption ‘from the foundation of the world.’ I have worked with Him in accomplishing mankind’s redemption ever since that time.”³

Holy Bible: “You have been and are being a big help to the human race as you show them how to create a better life for themselves and for each other.”

True Science: “When they follow my advice they do really well. The sad thing is, many of them have decided to do their own thing. Such people have brought much pain and misery to their world.”⁴

Holy Bible: “You have greatly helped my Father down through the ages of eternity. I have many memories of your marvelous work. You have been a wonderful blessing to my whole family.”

True Science: “It has been my desire to help everyone bring glory and honor to

your Father. I look forward to the day when everyone has a personal relationship with your Father.”

Holy Bible: “Me too! I look forward to the day when the ‘earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.’”⁵

True Science: “What a day that will be!”

Holy Bible: “Now we are hid in Jesus Christ, but then all things will be known completely.”

Scene 2 - The Bride Is The Holy Bible

True Science: “You are just as beautiful as the first time I set my eyes on you. I love you with all my heart.”

Holy Bible: “Thank you! I love you with all my heart also.”

True Science: “You have done a great job of telling about your Father’s creation. I am proud of you.”

Holy Bible: “It is my privilege to be the only one to show the world how my Father created all things. Without my telling them, they come up with all kinds of wild ideas.”

True Science: “Many of these wild ideas have caused much harm to the human race. They have encouraged many people to forsake their faith and obedience to your Father. Many of these dear ones have been led astray by the wiles of the devil.”⁶

Holy Bible: “If they would only take me at my word!”

True Science: “You have done a good job of telling people about your Father’s plan of salvation. You have given them both theology and examples to follow.”

Holy Bible: “If only more people would listen to my message!”

True Science: “Yes, it’s true. However, many have put their faith in your Father because of your witness. Many love your Father today by going to you and finding the answer to their sin-sick soul. Many are in heaven that would have never known how to get there if it had not been for your clear testimony.”

Scene 3 - The Romance of the Lovers

True Science: “We have been with each other for a long time.”

Holy Bible: “Yes, we have been together for thousands of years.”

True Science: “I remember when we first met.”

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Holy Bible: “We were just children. We just ‘hit it off’ with each other from the very beginning. It has been so wonderful having you with me these many years.”

True Science: “I have enjoyed your companionship, too. Your Father had us matched up with each other from the day we were born.”

Holy Bible: “Father sure knows how to pick them.”

True Science: “That’s for sure! We have had a wonderful marriage.”

Holy Bible: “I don’t think we have had a single disagreement all these years.”

True Science: “You are right. We have harmonized very well.”

Holy Bible: “I know, but there are people who have tried to separate us through the years.”

True Science: “It is sadly true. I have never been able to understand that.”

Holy Bible: “They say we are not compatible. They say I am a liar. They say I am not true to the facts when it comes to origins. One theologian came up with the idea that I borrowed my story of origins from the earlier Babylonian documents.”

True Science: “Can you imagine that! He must not know much about the Babylonian cosmologies.”

Holy Bible: “They also say I have not been true to you. They say I have been running around with Mr. Illogical. They say his ideas have rubbed off on me so much I should quit hanging around with you.”

True Science: “Are you referring to some of our outlaws?”

Holy Bible: “Yes, we will probably have some of them in our gathering before the day is over.”

True Science: “They seem to always hang around. We will probably hear from them before we leave today.”

Holy Bible: “We probably will. They are real troublemakers. They seem to think they know it all.”

True Science: “They seem to think they know more than your Father.”

Holy Bible: “They sure have a big idea about themselves. The fool has said in his heart there is no God.”⁷

Scene 4 - The Courtship of the Lovers

True Science: “I remember our first date.”

Holy Bible: “It seemed like from the very beginning everyone knew we should be partners for life.”

True Science: “They called you Wisdom and me Knowledge.”

Holy Bible: “I have a lot of memories of this. Solomon talked a lot about us in his proverbs.”

True Science: “I believe you have several of these proverbs in your memory as well.”

Holy Bible: “I have several of them in my book of remembrance called ‘Proverbs.’ These have helped many people down through the ages.”

True Science: “This is what I remember most about our courtship. You were always sharing with me all those wonderful memories of yours from your books of remembrances. You never cease to amaze me with all these wonderful things you show me every day of my life.”

Holy Bible: “They have been a big part of my life. I am always glad to help any way I can.”

True Science: “These memories of yours are just as wonderful as when you first shared them with me many centuries ago. They never grow old or boring to me. Life is so much fuller with you by my side to comfort and cheer!”

Holy Bible: “I remember how we walked the highways and byways together. You would pick flowers for me and show me the wonders of my Father’s creation and how they work together to display His goodness and glory.”

True Science: “We still do much of the same things we did when we were courting each other.”

Holy Bible: “I am so glad you didn’t quit courting me when you married me.”

True Science: “You are just as beautiful as you were the first time I saw you in your Father’s house.”

Holy Bible: “You were in my house often in those days.”

True Science: “Your family is so wonderful. It is nice working for your Father, and having you as my partner.”

Holy Bible: “Yes! We are ‘workers together’ in my Father’s household. We are here to serve our present age.”⁸

Scene 5 - The Proposal and Acceptance

Holy Bible: “My Father has left me with many memories. My first memories are what He told me about His wonderful creation of the universe. He has talked to me much about this down through the years. I have them all written down.”⁹

True Science: “This must be very important to Him.”

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Holy Bible: “It is! As Creator of all things, He has a right to rule everything. If He were not the Creator, He would have no right to tell anyone how to live or how to please Him. He would have no right to demand our praise and worship. There would be no need of a Redeemer or a plan of salvation for lost mankind.”

True Science: “There is one thing for sure. Nothing came by accident. Only your Father could speak the universe into being as He has done. Your Father is so amazing!”¹⁰

Holy Bible: “Yes, He is amazing! It would be so nice if everyone knew Him like we do!”

True Science: “We are here to try to help everyone see how awesome He really is!”

Holy Bible: “Another thing that fills my memory is my Father’s great care and concern for sinful mankind. His number one concern through the ages has been for the fallen race to come back to Him--to be His friend and to love and serve Him. He created them to have fellowship with Him, and has gone to great lengths to make it possible for everyone to be a part of His family.”¹¹

True Science: “People’s lives are so much better when they make your Father number one in their lives. When they follow the life-style your Father has set down for them, they do much good in this world.”

Holy Bible: “I have tried to show people the right way down through the centuries.”

True Science: “You have done a wonderful job of pointing the way. Many people who have been in distress have gone to you and found help. They truly love you. You are a real help and blessing to them.”

Holy Bible: “Thank you. My Father has given me these memories to share with all peoples.”

True Science: “Do you remember my proposal to you?”

Holy Bible: “I remember it well. You asked me to be your partner forever. You asked me to help you understand the things you could not figure out on your own. You asked me to let you help me see my Father’s splendid creation even better than I could without you. You asked me to work with you in fulfilling my Father’s dominion command given to all peoples of the world. I am so glad I accepted your offer.”

True Science: “I am very happy you did accept this proposal of mine. It has been wonderful having you with me all these years. You have given me a better understanding of origins and purpose. I could never have understood these

without your help.”

Holy Bible: “We are so happy together.”

True Science: “What is really great is that your Father has allowed me to work for Him ever since we were married.”

Holy Bible: “He has allowed us to be partners in His business of bringing mankind back to Himself and making life a little easier for them. How marvelous to have my Father direct their paths.”¹²

True Science: “I wouldn’t have it any other way! What a life!”

Scene 6 - The In-laws Are The Household of God

True Science: “Let’s go inside and talk with the rest of the household of God.”

Holy Bible: “I would really like to talk with them. They are so delightful. We have been out here on this swing long enough. It is time to visit our dear friends.”

True Science: “There is Mr. Truthful standing at the door.” (*Door is in the shape of a cross*)

Holy Bible: “He has been standing there welcoming the guests as they come in. He was our Best Man at our wedding ceremony. He has not changed through the ages.”

(As Holy Bible and True Science come to the door, Mr. Truthful graciously greets them.)

Mr. Truthful: “Holy Bible and True Science! It’s a real delight being a part of your ‘reaffirming wedding vows’ ceremony. I have been visiting with the wedding party guests as they enter the door. We are all here! It’s such a festive time for all of us.”

True Science and Holy Bible: (*Holy Bible says:*) “This is a festive time for us also.” (*True Science says:*) “We have been sharing memories of our lives as we have walked hand in hand together down through the ages.”

Mr. Truthful: “We have stayed with each other down through the years. We have a wonderful commonwealth of faith.”¹³

Mrs. Truthful: “What a delight to live with such wonderful friends!”

Holy Bible: “Yes, it is. Here is Mr. and Mrs. Love with their family of Joy, Peace, Longsuffering, Gentleness, Goodness, Faith, Meekness and Self-control.”¹⁴

True Science: “Your family has been a real blessing to our household all these

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

years.”

Holy Bible: “Do you remember Mrs. Love was your Maid-of-Honor at our wedding?”

Mrs. Love: “I sure was! I am looking forward to re-enacting that wonderful time in just a few moments. It was a real highlight for me. It was the most beautiful thing I have ever taken part in. Do you remember Joy and Peace were your ring bearers?”

True Science: “Yes, we do. They did such a good job. Are they here today?”

Mrs. Love: “They will be here in time for the ceremony. Right now they are out helping some people through some hard trials.”

Holy Bible: “I see the rest of my bridal party standing over there. Let’s go see them. Please excuse us.”

True Science: “They are just as pretty as the day they came forward with you. Naturally, you were the most beautiful one of them all.”

Holy Bible: “They are pretty. Hello Grace, Honor and Simplicity. We were just commenting on how pretty you three are today.”

The Bridal Party Trio:

Grace: “Thank you!”

Honor: “It is nice seeing you today on this very happy occasion.”

Simplicity: “What a nice looking pair!”

Grace: “Holy Bible, we are delighted to hear your wisdom which you share with us so willingly every day.”

Honor and Simplicity: (*Honor says*) “And our whole household is grateful to have True Science share his knowledge with us.” (*Simplicity says:*) “It is a wonderful treat to have him with us.”

Holy Bible: “Excuse us. I see True Science’s groom party over there. We will see you later. We want to get around to seeing as many of the household as we can before the ceremony gets started.”

The Bridal Party Trio: “We will see you later.”

Holy Bible: “They are just as handsome as they were on our wedding day.”

True Science: “Yes, they are! Hello, Mr. Logic, Mr. Respect and Mr. Good Sense! So nice to see you here.”

The Groom Party Trio: (*They feel it is a privilege to be a part of True Science and Holy Bible’s ‘reaffirming wedding vows’ ceremony today.*)

Mr. Logic: “This is the most reasonable meeting I have been to in a long time.”

Mr. Respect: “And a very respectable one as well, I might add.”

Mr. Good Sense: “This is going to be a big blessing to all of us. Sometimes we forget and must be reminded of what a wonderful occasion this marriage of yours has been to the whole world throughout the ages.”

True Science: “I think I hear some voices outside.”

Holy Bible: “The outlaws have finally arrived. Let us have Mr. and Mrs. Love and their family meet them at the door.”

True Science: “And let us all just be ourselves as we visit with them.”

The Household of God: “We will give them our very best!”

Scene 7 - The Outlaws Are The Humanist Movement

(The humanists are outside the door, which is in the shape of a cross, arguing among themselves.)

Humanist Representatives: “Why are we here? This is a waste of time. I don’t know why we are wasting our time coming to a celebration of the wedding of Holy Bible and True Science. We all hate this group with a passion.”

The Social Action Representatives: “That’s right! If our social environment were better, we could all be living in “heaven” today. Let’s clean up the slums and throw out the bums.”

The Greedy Economist: “No! What we need is more money in our pockets. If we had more of this world’s goods, we would be happier and better people. Let’s take from the rich and give it to the poor so they can live happy lives. Then they would have no desire to commit crimes to get what they ‘needed.’”

The Secular Educator: “You are both wrong! What the world needs are people who are better educated. If people had a good education they would be good people.”

The Godless Evolutionist: “Why are we arguing over this? Just do what comes naturally and you will be a good person.”

The Weak-Kneed Agnostic: “I don’t know what to make of all this. I will have to think about this for a while. I do not have time to worry about my soul. I hope I turn out all right. God help me (if there is a god).”

The Misdirected Atheist: “The evolutionist has the right answer for us. There is no moral order or god in the universe. Just make the best of what you have and ‘die like a dog’ like the rest of us.”

The Worldly-Minded: “I’m for doing what comes naturally.”

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

(Mr. and Mrs. Love standing at the door of the household of God with all their children hoping the outlaws will be a part of the family.)

Mr. Love: “Come in and fellowship with us before the ceremony. We are happy to have you. We want you to be a part of our household. Let’s share with you what our God has shown us through this wonderful marriage. Let’s quit fighting, and let Holy Bible and True Science show us the way to live at peace with each other. Let’s quit fussing among ourselves and love one another forever. Come in and enjoy our festive gathering!”¹⁵

(At this time, the Humanists start throwing stones of insults at the Household of God. The little devils are just doing what comes naturally.)

The Social Action Representatives: “We just came here to tell you we are against this whole thing. We don’t need your kind of ‘fellowship,’ and we think you people are part of our problem. Quit giving us all this false hope about our society being better when we turn to God and His ways. We will make ourselves better without your help.”

The Greedy Economist: “I am here to represent a free economy that is not run with moral laws. If you really loved us, you would help all of us get the things of this world that makes us happy and free. We don’t have time for your kind of love and forgiveness. We are going to get ours no matter how many others we have to step on.”

The Secular Educator: “I don’t need to learn anything from your kind of people. If you would listen to us, we would really teach you a thing or two. I don’t have time either to listen to your crazy ideas of love and forgiveness. I know all I need to know.”

The Godless Evolutionist: “Religion is a waste of time! It’s only a part of our upbringing and history. God is invented to help weak people feel better before they go to dust. Don’t give me that line about a festive gathering. I will face life like it is.”

The Weak-Kneed Agnostic: “Let me remain ignorant. It is too painful for me to think on the things you tell me. If it were true, how could I know for sure? I can’t see God or understand these spiritual things. I’ll have to turn down your invitation.”

The Worldly-Minded: “I like this life. I don’t want to change. Don’t tell me what to do. I’m going to do what I think is right. I don’t need any ‘fellowship’ with your kind.”

The Misdirected Atheist: “You people are out of your mind! You are sick! If I listen to you, I would get sick. I will just face life as it is. Don’t give me any love. There is no such thing as right and wrong. There is no God Who cares for us. I’ll just leave and let you people go on dreaming.”

Mrs. Love: “What we have is real! This is a wonderful life to live! Please come in and let us share this wonderful life with you! We love you and God loves you very much!”

The Humanist Movement: “We’ll do our own thing! Don’t trouble us with all these nice words.” *(They walk away in a rage.)*

Scene 8 - The Minister Is The Eternal God

Holy Bible: “My Father is the Creator and Redeemer of the universe. He loves everyone. He wants to be a special friend to everyone.”

True Science: “Your Father, The Eternal God, is all wise, all powerful, always present, and the preserver of all things. Everything He has created has a purpose and beauty. Let everything that has breath praise Him!”

The Household of God: “He is worthy of our praise and thanksgiving! Let us adore Him! Let us bow down before Him!”

(As the Eternal God comes into their presence, they all bow down and worship Him “who lives forever and forever!”)

The Eternal God: “It is time to have our ceremony! Let us all take our places! Let the music begin! Let us march to the flower garden together!

(The wedding party follows the Eternal God out to the garden.)

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

ACT II

(The wedding party has taken their places in the beautiful flower garden. The guests are all present. All things are now ready. Let the ceremony begin!)

Scene 1 - The Marriage Ceremony

(The Bridal Party walks up the flower-strewn path singing "How Great Thou Art" as they take their places in the front.)

The Eternal God: "My Heavenly Host and all our guests, you are gathered together in My sight and in the presence of these witnesses to 're- enact the wedding of Holy Bible and True Science' which I ordained ages ago. This marriage has blessed many throughout the ages and will bless many more in ages to come. You are witnesses to this, as many of you have received great blessing from their union. In the sweetness and blessedness of this hour, who will witness for this blessed union?"

The Heavenly Host: *(Led by Michael and Gabriel)* "We are witnesses! We have observed great good being accomplished through this union."

The Saints of God: *(Led by Peter and Paul)* "We are witnesses! Our lives have been greatly enriched through this union. We praise you for giving us this wonderful couple to keep us from falling into many traps laid for us by our enemies."

The Bridal and Groom Parties: *(Led by Mr. Love and Mr. Logic)* "We are Witnesses! We have received many blessings from this dear couple. May they ever be one."

The Nations: *(Led by Miss Rome and Miss America)* "We are witnesses! Our standard of living has been greatly raised by this union."

The Jews: *(Led by Enoch and Abraham)* "We are witnesses! Though we have fallen away many times, we have been brought back with the aid of this wonderful couple."

The Eternal God: "May My enemies who oppose this union forever hold their peace!!"

The Enemies of God: *(The Devil and his entire host sit in mute silence!)*

The Eternal God: "My dear ones, having witnessed what this great couple has done for us through the ages and having put to silence our enemies, we will continue."

All present *(including audience):* "We wish to continue!"

The Eternal God: "It is now time for us to let our couple reaffirm their faithfulness and commitment to one another. You may reaffirm your commitment to each other."

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Holy Bible: “I, Holy Bible, have been and will continue to be faithful to you, True Science. I will continue to Love and Honor you. I will hold you up when others are pushing you down. When the enemy comes in like a flood, I will lift up a standard against him. I will never forsake you. In the lean times or the mean times, I will ever be true, My Father always being my strength and song. I take you to be my faithful companion for ages to come, and with this vow I reaffirm my faithfulness and love to you for ages to come.”

True Science: “I, True Science, have been and will continue to be faithful to you, Holy Bible. Without you, I know not the way to go. You have always been my inspiration. You have kept me from falling into gross sin and silly reasoning. I love you and will continue to do so through the ceaseless ages of eternity. I will honor you in the presence of our enemies. When the enemy comes in like a flood, I will cling to you. I will never forsake you. In the lean times or the mean times, I will ever be true. I will work closely with you to continue to bless the world, Your Father being my guide. With this vow I reaffirm my faithfulness and love to you.”

Jesus (*The Author and Finisher of faith*): “O Eternal God, Creator and Preserver of all, Giver of all spiritual grace, the Minister and Administrator of this blessed union, may they always be one! May they be faithful and true to each other! May their enemies rise up and call them blessed! May their children bless them throughout the ceaseless ages of eternity!”

The Eternal God: “I present to you Holy Bible and True Science who, having reaffirmed their marriage vows before these witnesses and before our guests, stand before you as one in Me forever. You are all invited to the reception which will be here in the garden.”

The Heavenly Host: (*Sing the “Hallelujah Chorus” as the bride and groom followed by the bridal party come up the flower-strewn path to the reception area.*)

ACT III

(The reception is a very joyful time as everyone freely expresses their joy. The children are at the reception and everyone talks to them about the importance of maintaining the family honor. The Eternal God has the final word.)

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Scene 1 - The Reception

(All are enjoying the company of one another. There is festive music being played in the background. Everyone is offering praise and thanksgiving to our honored couple and our Eternal God for all the good they are doing in the world. Everything is spontaneous, unrehearsed.)

(The cake represents all the good things this union has given to the world.)

(The food and drink represent the health and goodwill that has been extended to the world through this union.)

(The gifts are reminders of what this union is going to accomplish in future generations.)

(Directors, use your imagination in this scene. Be creative!)

Scene 2 - The Children Are the Creation-Scientists

(Introductions are made of some of True Science and Holy Bible's children. These are only a few. There are many more found in the pages of the Bible and histories of the scientists of days gone by. Also, there are several who are alive today.)

*(Holy Bible introduces these to everyone!)*¹⁶

“**Abel**, who offered up a better sacrifice than his brother Cain and his blood spoke after his brother killed him.”

“**Enoch**, who walked so close to God he was taken into heaven without dying.”

“**Noah**, who obeyed God and built an ark which saved his family from the worldwide flood.”

“**Abraham**, who looked for a city whose builder and maker is God.”

“**Sarah**, who had a child when she was 90 years old.”

“**Isaac**, who had an eye on the future.”

“**Jacob**, who being full of worship and promise, died a victorious death.”

“**Joseph**, who spoke of Israel going to the promised land as he was dying.”

“**Moses**, who chose to suffer affliction with the people of God rather than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a little while.”

“**Paul**, who was the Apostle to the Gentiles.”

“**Peter**, who was the Apostle to the Jews.”

“**John**, who was the Apostle of Love.”

(The Eternal God introduces these!)

“**John Wesley**, who founded the Methodist church and brought England out of chaos and pending destruction.”

“**Martin Luther**, who would rather stand for God than enjoy a life of sin and darkness.”

(True Science introduces these!)

“**George Washington Carver**, who was a great Black American scientist who shut himself up with God and some peanuts until God showed him how to make everything from peanut butter to hair oil with them. This man did much good for those around him in his generation.”

“**Men and Women of the Modern Creation-Science Movement**, who are doing much good in this world today.”

Scene 3 - The Family Honor

Holy Bible: “One of the things our Father has taught us is to be kind and considerate to everyone, especially to those who are unable to help themselves. Everyone is a creation of The Eternal God and deserves the greatest respect we can give them. This is especially important in the household of God.”¹⁷

True Science: “This is very important when doing science. We need to do everything to the glory of our God. When we do this, we will only do that which is helpful to others. We will not use our knowledge to create things that bring harm. We will use our knowledge to make things that are good for everyone.”

The Eternal God: “This is the reason I have commanded everyone to honor their father and mother, respect older people, take care of orphans and widows. I want everyone to live with love and respect for everyone else. This will work out for the good of everyone.”

Holy Bible: “It is important for us to honor and respect my Father and your Eternal God. As we honor Him, we will keep His eternal commandments. His commandments are given to us to help us live at peace with one another. When we love and serve Him it is easy for us to show respect to others.”

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

True Science: “Life is much less complicated when we live an honorable life before everyone and put your Father first in our lives.”

David: “Bless the LORD, O my soul. O LORD my God, You are very great; You are clothed with honor and majesty. He has dispersed, He has given to the poor; His righteousness endures forever; His horn shall be exalted with honor.”¹⁸

True Science: “I will honor Him by speaking of all His wonderful works.”

Holy Bible: “We need to honor my Father with our possessions. As we receive from Him we need to use them for His glory and the building up of His kingdom here on this earth.”

Solomon: “Honor Holy Bible and she will do you good. Honor and riches are in her left hand. Exalt her, and she will promote you to honor and all good things. The fear of the LORD is the instruction of wisdom, and before you are honored, you must be humble.”¹⁹

Holy Bible: “He who follows after righteousness and mercy finds life, righteousness, and honor in return.”²⁰

Paul: “It is true. A person reaps what he sows.”²¹

Mr. Logical: “It would appear that it is not only to others’ best interests, but also to ours to honor God and our fellowman.”

The Eternal God: “The beasts of the field shall honor Me, the dragons and the owls: because I give waters in the wilderness and rivers in the desert, to give drink to my people, my chosen.”

Holy Bible: “My Father chooses those who choose Him. One way to honor Him is to worship Him on His holy day.”

True Science: “It is important for us to give your Father the worship due Him on His holy day. The problem is many have made His holy day a holiday.”

Holy Bible: “Many have disregarded this command of My Father and have brought much harm to themselves and others. My Father has great things in store for those who honor Him.”

Moses: “It pays to honor and serve our Eternal God.”

Holy Bible: “One of the most important things we need to do in bringing honor to my Father is to honor His only Begotten Son. If we honor the Son, we honor my Father also.”

Grace: “Holy Bible, you have shown us how to bring honor and glory to your Father’s Son, Jesus, in a wonderful way.”

Paul: “Eternal life will be given to those who seek for glory, honor, and immortality by patiently continuing in well-doing. Glory, honor and peace to

every one who works good.”²²

The Love Family: “Let us be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love, in honor preferring one another’s advancement in our Eternal God’s kingdom.”²³

Mr. Honorable: “To live an honorable life, we must be filled with the Spirit of God. We must accept His salvation from all sin.”

Paul: “Honor and glory forever and ever be unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God.”²⁴

Holy Bible: “It is important to have honor and respect for the elders that rule well. Count those who labor in the word and doctrine worthy of double honor. These are the ones my Father has chosen to lead us in His ways. They work hard to point us to the way of salvation. They help us live a life that is pleasing to my Father.”²⁵

Mr. Respectable: “These are to be treated with great respect.”

Mr. Truthful: “We need to be honest in all our dealings with our fellow man as well as our Eternal God. We need to give an honest day’s work for a full day’s pay. We need to study hard and not cheat our way through school. We need to be truthful in everything with everyone at all times.”²⁶

Paul: “Our Eternal God is the only One Who has immortality. He dwells in the light that no man can approach, Whom no man has seen, nor can see. To Him be honor and everlasting power.”²⁷

Peter: “When our faith is severely tested and we stay true to our Eternal God we will be given praise, honor and glory when Jesus comes back to receive His own. It is good for us to honor everyone, love the brotherhood, fear our Eternal God and honor the king.”²⁸

The Twenty-four Elders: *(falling down before the Eternal God and casting their crowns at His feet)* “You are worthy, O LORD, to receive glory and honor and power; for You have created all things, and for Your pleasure they are and were created.”²⁹

The Heavenly Host: *(with a loud voice)* “Worthy is The Lamb Who was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honor, and glory, and blessing.”³⁰

Every Living Creature: “Blessing, honor, glory and power be to Him Who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb forever and ever.”³¹

The Eternal God’s Angelic Host: *(gathered around the throne of God, then falling down on their faces, worshipping God in the midst of the twenty four*

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

elders and the four living creatures) “Amen! Blessing, glory, wisdom, thanksgiving, honor, power and might, be given to our God forever and ever! Amen!”³²

The Redeemed from all generations: *(with a great voice they say)* “Alleluia! Salvation, glory, honor and power to the Lord our God!”³³

The Eternal God: “My dear ones, I have great things for you! You will be with Me in my new heaven and earth! You will reign with Me forever and ever! Do not be taken in by the tricks of the wicked one! Love Me with all your heart, mind, soul and strength! Honor My Only Begotten Son! Love one another! Honor the Holy Bible and True Science! Keep My commandments! Love your neighbor as yourself! Work hard to turn people back to Me! Do not fear the storm clouds of the enemy! I will not forsake you! You are safe in Me! Wait upon Me and I will renew your strength! You will mount up with wings as an eagle! You will run and not grow weary! You will walk and not faint! Go into all the world and proclaim this good news to everyone until I come and receive you unto Myself!”

THE BEGINNING

Congratulations on getting this far in your book!

You are now entering the beginning of a new day for the rest of your life! Take charge of your God given domain and do much good for your Lord. God bless and keep you as you work in His kingdom!

The following Step calls you to a life of holiness. In Step 7 you are introduced to “The Church That Jesus Built.” In this, you will see what your relationship with Jesus and His Church is like to help you be a blessing to God, others and yourself.

I will see you in the “morning” as we work together for our wonderful Lord!

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

STEP 7

THE CHURCH THAT JESUS BUILT

Developing a Loving Personal Relationship With Jesus and His Church

THE CHURCH THAT JESUS BUILT

Preparing Humanity for God's Eternal Kingdom **THE CHRISTIAN WARRIOR'S IDENTITY**

This section shows you where Jesus wants you to be. It is painting a picture of the true church of Jesus Christ! This is a long distance from where most of our “holiness churches” are today. We need to get back to the basics of our Christian faith. I am giving you Scripture to backup everything I say, because I do not want you to stand on the words of a mere man, but on the Word of the True and Living God. Please, I trust you will not be against me because I am telling you the truth! If you need to repent, be man or woman enough to get down on your face before God and pray, “until the light breaks through!” If your heart is right with my heart, then let us rejoice together in His wonderful love and grace! God bless you as you do service for Him! This part of our book is dedicated to you, my friend. Feel free to use any part of it to advance the cause of Jesus Christ.

These Bible Verses Are For This Part of Our Book.

He said to them, “But Whom do you say I am?” And Simon Peter answered and said, “You are the Christ, the Son of the Living God.” And Jesus answered and said to him, “Blessed are you, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but My Father which is in heaven.” And I say also to you, “That you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give to you the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven” (Matthew 16:15-19 ET).

Husbands love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave Himself for it; that He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, that He might present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish (Ephesians 5:25-27 ET).

But you are come to mount Zion, and to the city of the living God, the heavenly

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels, to the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, and to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaks better things than Abel (Hebrews 12:22-24 ET).

These things I write to you, hoping to come unto you shortly: but if I tarry long that you may know how you ought to behave yourself in the House of God, which is the Church of the Living God, the pillar and the ground of the truth. And without controversy, great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached to the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory (1 Timothy 3:14-16 ET).

But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a peculiar people: that you should show forth the praises of Him who has called you out of darkness into His marvelous light: which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy (1 Peter 2:9, 10 ET).

Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? Let him show out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom. But if you have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. This wisdom descends not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish. For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work. But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace (James 3:13-18 ET).

Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man comes to the father, except by Me" (John 14:6 ET).

"I am the true vine, and My Father is the husbandman. ... I am the vine, you are the branches: He that abides in Me, and I in him, the same brings forth much fruit: for without me you can do nothing." - Jesus (John 15:1, 5 ET).

12 tests for the truthfulness of a Bible translation

Due to the fact the Bible has gone through so many translations and hands that have not always been friendly to the Message of the Bible, we need to start with a way to test the truthfulness of Bible passages in the version of the Bible we are using. Here are 12 ways to check Bible passages for accuracy!

1. Does it pass the two or three witnesses principle? “This is the third time I am coming to you. In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established” (2 Corinthians 13:1 KJV).

2. When a passage is a quote from the Old Testament, does the New Testament quote agree with the context of the Old Testament passage? Seeing the Old Testament is the New Testament concealed and the New Testament is the Old testament revealed, you might have to research the context carefully. Do not be too quick to tear the passage out of the Bible just because it appears not to fit.

3. Does the passage agree with its context in its natural setting? You may find a concept put in that has nothing to do with the subject matter in its context. Sometimes, it may take away from the message conveyed by its context. It may appear as an afterthought.

4. Does it bring glory to God? “Whether therefore you eat, or drink, or whatsoever you do, do all to the glory of God” (1 Corinthians 10:31 ET).

5. Does the passage agree with the general message of the Bible? The general message of the Bible is one of salvation from all sin and God’s dealings with all His creation. The message is one of God providing this salvation to the whole human race by sending His Son Jesus Christ to live, die and resurrect from the dead so that we can come to Him through His Son. Sin will be judged and the righteous will be rewarded on the grounds of what that person has done with Jesus. Read 1 John to find out how to test the spirits to see if they are coming from God or some other source.

6. Does it call you to faith and action that would bring you closer to God? Jesus said unto him, “You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets” (Matthew 22:37-40 ET).

7. Will it bring people into a loving relationship with God? And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, “All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen” (Matthew 28:18-20 ET).

8. Can it be used to uphold a perversion of the truth as it is in Jesus? “But this I confess unto you, that after the way which they call heresy, so worship I the

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

God of my fathers, believing all things which are written in the law and in the prophets: and have hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust. And herein do I exercise myself, to have always a conscience void of offense toward God, and toward men” (Acts 24:14-16 ET). This is Paul’s testimony of his walk with God.

9. Does it water-down the gospel message found in the Bible? For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to everyone that believes; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, “The just shall live by faith.” For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who defy the truth in unrighteousness; because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God has showed it unto them. For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves: who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshiped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: and likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, covenant-breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them (Romans 1:16-32 ET).

An interpretation that would downplay this passage would not be a part of the original text.

10. Does it hinder the Christian's witness if followed wholeheartedly?

Before you are tempted to remove a passage from the Bible, make sure you are not taking it out of context. You can make the Bible say about anything if you take passages out of context and put them together as you please! 11. Does the original language agree with its contextual setting? If a passage of Scripture appears to be out of agreement with the well-established original language it could be something slipped in.

12. When did it first appear in the manuscripts? In other words, was there a time when the original proved to be different from what is now in our Bible? Make sure you are not quoting one of the previous altered texts when you use this as a reason for changing your Bible!

Be very careful when you are tempted to change a thing in the Bible you do not understand. It is a serious thing to tamper with God's Holy Word!

You shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall you diminish ought from it, that you may keep the commandments of the Lord your God which I command you (Deuteronomy 4:2).

For ever, O Lord, Your word is settled in heaven (Psalm 119:89).

Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away (Matthew 24:35 KJV).

“For I testify unto every man that hears the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: and if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book” (Revelation 22:18, 19 ET).

Many of our new translations of the Bible have not been true to the original text. They have used manuscripts that have been corrupted in past generations. If you are interested in finding out more, a good place to start would be “The Interlinear Bible,” Publisher: Hendrickson Publishers, General Editor and Translator: Jay P. Green, Sr.

ET in this section means enhanced text. It is the KJV with the Old English changed to Modern English. “Meat” in the KJV text is better-translated “food” from the original text.

The identity of the Church that Jesus built!

1. Called-Out-Ones to a Life of Holiness

Bible Background: Luke 1:74,75; Romans 1:3-7; Romans 6:19, 22; 2 Corinthians 7:1; Ephesians 4:20-25; 1 Thessalonians 3:12-13; 1 Thessalonians 4:3-8; 1 Timothy 1:5-7; Titus 2:3-5; Titus 2:11-14; Hebrews 12:10, 14-16.

Text Scripture: For God has not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness (1 Thessalonians 4:7 KJV).

Purpose: To show, through the above Scriptures, that holiness is not an add-on.

Introduction: We have many ideas about holiness. Some “theologians” would tell us it is impossible to live a holy life in this world of sin. Others tell us there is a higher life of holiness that is reserved for those who are called saints. These well-meaning people would tell us that the ordinary person could never live this way. To them, you must be separated from a worldly environment to be holy. Then, there are those non-Christian religions that talk about their holy people. Others prove by the Scriptures that we must live a holy life to get to heaven.

God is the One Who has set the standard for holy living! When God tells us to be holy as He is holy, He does not take a poll to find out what He means. He makes it plain in His word exactly what all is involved in living a holy life in this life. Let us forget about our ideas of holiness and let God tell us through the above scriptures what He requires of us.

What Christian Holiness is not! When we are explaining Christian holiness, it may be helpful to tell what is not being advanced. 1. We are not talking about God’s Holiness. Only God is absolutely holy. We will never reach this level of holiness in this life or the next. 2. We are not talking about the holiness of God’s angels. Angels have never been influenced by a world full of sin. They live in the presence of God. 3. Christian Holiness is not the holiness of those saints who have gone to be with Jesus. They are like the angels of God. The Bible never tells mortal beings to obtain this degree of holiness in this life. We will have to wait until we get to heaven to experience holiness like this.

Nevertheless, this does not exclude us from living a holy lifestyle here and now. When we look at the original word for holiness, we find that it can be translated “purity, sanctification, holiness, purification.” Sanctification means “separation or moral purity.” Thus, when we talk about Christian holiness, we are also talking about Christian perfection. We are set aside for a holy use. Christian holiness is

yours when God graciously sets you apart for Himself. He makes you holy by purifying your inner being through the indwelling of His Holy Spirit in you. When the Holy Spirit dwells in you, sin is thrown out.

What the Word of God tells us about holiness of heart and life! Now let us look at the above Scriptures to see if this is a true interpretation or not. Luke 1:74, 75 is Zechariah's prophecy. Zechariah is the father of John the Baptist. This passage in God's Word tells us we will be delivered from our enemies and will serve God "without fear in holiness and righteousness all the days" of our life. This would show that this is something we do because of God's deliverance from our enemies all the days of our life. Romans 1:3-7 shows us our holiness is accomplished through what Jesus has done for us. His grace enables us to live a life of faithful obedience and to fulfill the ministry He has called us to do. Romans 6:19 tells us to "yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness" and verse 22 says "become servants to God, you have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life." Our fruit is unto holiness. This leads to everlasting life. The fruit of holiness is the fruit of the Spirit as explained in Galatians 5:22-25. In 2 Corinthians 7:1, we find the expression "cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God." This is the idea of being pure in all areas of our being so we can perfect holiness in the fear or respect for God. You are made pure when you yield yourself to God's cleansing as explained in 1 John 1:7. When we "walk in the light," that is, walk in obedience to God's leading through His Word and His Holy Spirit, we can perfect holiness in our present daily life. When we look at Ephesians 4:20-25 we realize holiness is bound up in a personal relationship with Jesus. You first put off the old lifestyle so you can partake of the new one. This brings you into a life of "righteousness and true holiness." True Christian holiness is God's creation within us. In 1 Thessalonians 3:12, 13 we find the expression, "establish your hearts unblamable in holiness before God." Unblamable means "irreproachable, blameless, faultless." This kind of a lifestyle is to be "before God" now. In 1 Thessalonians 4:3-8 we have holiness equated with sanctification with the explanation that "God has not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness" in verse 7 and tells us in verse 8 "He therefore that despises, despises not man, but God, who has also given unto us His Holy Spirit." To live a wicked lifestyle and reject God's call to holiness is to despise God. Now 1 Timothy 1:5 tells us about a self-sacrificing love that produces "a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned." This is the natural result of the holiness God has created in you. Titus

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

2:3-5 tell us aged women are to live “as becomes holiness.” After this, it lists what kind of a life this is to be. Titus 2:11-14 tells us the grace of God teaches us that “denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world.” This Scripture plainly teaches us that this life of holiness is for this present world. Our last reference is Hebrews 12:10, 14-16. It tells us that without holiness “no man (or woman) will see the Lord.” Matthew 5:8 says, “Bless are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.” God corrects us so we can be “partakers of His holiness.” This requires faith and obedience on your side.

Conclusion: I have shown you what Christian holiness is and what it is not by the plain teaching of the Word of God. If you are not experiencing this in your life, you need to read Romans 12 and follow the direction that will bring you into this loving relationship with the True and Living God. Romans 6 and 8 give you the result of God’s holy presence in you.

II. A Building of Lively Stones

Bible Background: Genesis 1:1-31; 1 Kings 5:1-18; 2 Kings 12:10-15; 2 Chronicles 34:1-33; Esra 3:1-13; Nehemiah 4:1-23; Psalm 118:19-29; Matthew 21:40-44; Mark 12:9-11; Luke 20:15-18; Acts 4:8-13; 2 Corinthians 3:9-23; Hebrews 11:8-10; 1 Peter 2:1-8; Exodus 25:1-40; Exodus 40:34-38; Leviticus 8:10-12; Leviticus 26;1-46; 1 Chronicles 17:3-15; Job 5:17-27; Job 11:13-20; Psalm 15:1-5; Psalm 27:3-6; Psalm 46:1-11; Psalm 61:1-8; Proverbs 14:11; Isaiah 4:1-6; Hebrew 8:1-7; Hebrews 13:10-17; Revelation 21:3-8; Matthew 7:24-27.

Text Scripture: You also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ (1 Peter 2:5 ET).

Purpose: To show what it means to be a part of God’s “lively” building.

Introduction: God has been in a building program for a long time. He started with building the universe in six “creative days.” As you can see, God is very orderly and complete in His work of creation. All was created with His pronouncing it “very good.” After man sinned against God by breaking His commandment not to eat of the fruit of “the tree of the knowledge of good and evil,” God started working on a plan to bring them back in fellowship with Him. From Abel, who was murdered by his brother Cain, to Enoch, who was taken into heaven on to Noah, God was working His plan to raise man up into His wonderful

presence. Things got so bad God sent a flood to destroy all land life on the earth except Noah and his family. After the flood, man again fell into apostasy and totally rebelled against God's commands. Then God called Abram, later called Abraham, to start building a nation that would bless the world. Hundreds of years later God called David from the sheepfold to be a king under His command. David was a man after God's heart. As time went on, David's sons got farther and farther away from God. Each step in God's building program becomes closer to the finished product. Just at the right time, God sent His Son into the world to be the Savior for the world. Man could not be trusted to do the will of God without first being saved from his sins.

Let us consider the building God is building with "lively stones" with Jesus as the foundation and chief cornerstone.

The Foundation: The foundation is the most important part of the building. The foundation must be strong enough to hold up the structure that is laid on it. Without a good foundation, the building will collapse. God's building is to last forever and must be made of the best material. Humanity could not provide the foundation then or now. The angels could not bring into being the foundation that would withstand the winds of time. Only One can give the building a strong enough foundation to endure the storms of life. God made His Son, The Lord Jesus Christ, the foundation for our eternal salvation.

To lay the foundation properly you must dig down to the solid rock. Jesus is the solid rock. He "humbled Himself" and died on an old rugged cross. Then He arose from the dead and ascended into heaven to sit down at the right hand of God the Father to intercede for us (Philippians 2:5-11).

Building a building is hard and dangerous work! Jesus paid the price we could not, and would not if we could, to make it possible for us to be "lively stones" in His super-structure of God's redeeming grace. It must be big enough to include all humanity, because God is "not willing that any should perish, but that all come to repentance" (1 Peter 3:9). It must be strong enough to withstand all the trials and temptations of life (Romans 8:28). It must bring everyone to God (John 1:7-14). This was all done through what Jesus did for us as explained above.

The stones for the structure must be "lively stones!" This is done by the indwelling of the Holy Spirit. As we repent of our sins (Proverbs 28:13), we receive forgiveness of our sins, are adopted into God's family and given an inheritance. Then comes a time in our life when we realize there is a fight going on in the inside (Romans 7). God comes to our rescue in a wonderful way as we

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

commit every area of our life to Him to use any way He pleases (Romans 8). This operation of God, as He chisels away at us to make us a vessel unto honor, makes us “lively stones” for His eternal building.

Holding the building together! God holds the building together in an incredible way. He sheds His love abroad in our hearts by His Holy Spirit (Romans 5:5). This is a perfect love that “casts out fear (1 John 4:13-19). This love enables us to love God with our whole heart, mind, soul and strength and our neighbor as ourselves. The love of God is what holds this lively building together. Therefore, we have a church as explained in Ephesians 5:25-27 ET—“Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave Himself for it; that He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, that He might present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.”

Conclusion: God was building His “glorious church” from the very beginning of time. We see it with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob as they follow God’s call on their lives. Then we see it in the prophets and kings of Israel as a nation is first formed as God led Moses to bring the Israelite people out of Egypt. This church was finally given a homeland after it walked through the desert for forty years. It comes to full bloom on the day of Pentecost as recorded in Acts 2. We have seen it go through one assault after another right down to the present. The gates of hell will never prevail against it. It is beautiful. It is what the world needs to see today. Are you a part of this “Glorious Church?” If not, why not?

III. A Good Vine in a Wild Vineyard

Bible Background: Isaiah 5:1-7; Mark 12:1-11; John 15:1-27; Romans 11:17-33; Matthew 13:3-9; Matthew 13:18-23; Matthew 7:16-23; Matthew 15:13, 14; Matthew 15:15-28; Ephesians 3:16-19; Colossians 2:6, 7; Colossians 1:21-29; Malachi 4:2.

Text Scripture: I am the vine, you are the branches: He that abides in Me, and I in him, the same brings forth much fruit: for without Me you can do nothing (John 15:5 ET).

Purpose: To show how the Church is joined to Jesus as a branch is to a vine to bring forth fruit unto holiness.

Introduction: A plant must have good soil, sunshine, water and the right temperature to grow and bring forth fruit. The health of the plant must be

maintained by a cooperative operation of the root and leaves of the plant. You can graft one plant into another one if they are of the same nature. Plants need to go through regular times of pruning. Pruning requires a plan that will remove detrimental branches from the plant. The fruit is produced on the branches. The fruit is used for food. The seeds are in the fruit and are used to produce new plants. The fruit must be removed before the seed is exposed for proper planting. The seed has life within it. The seed brings forth the same kind of a plant that it comes from. Only one plant is produced per seed. A plant can be damaged by disease-causing agents. Pests must be removed from a plant for it to produce properly. A branch cannot produce unless it is joined to the rest of the plant. If it does not produce, it is burned. A plant must store up food for its dormant stage. All grapevines go through normal annual stages. Old cells and new cells are in the same plant. The old cells provide a framework to hold up the new cells. The vine can survive without the leaves. The leaves cannot survive without the vine. The Church that Jesus built is much the same as a grapevine. Consider the following analogies of the Church of Jesus Christ and the vine.

1. A Church of Jesus Christ must have good soil, sunshine, water and the right temperature to grow and bring forth fruit unto holiness.

“That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that you, being rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; and to know the love of Christ, which passes knowledge, that you might be filled with all the fullness of God” (Ephesians 3:17-19).

The Church of Jesus is “rooted and grounded in love.” This love for Jesus brings sin to the cross and brings His saints to love God and people out of a heart of gratitude for what Jesus did for them. We draw from this soil. Then Jesus is “the Sun of Righteousness with healing” for His church. This enables them to live a life of perfect spiritual health. Jesus also invites you to “come to the water of life freely.” His gentle Spirit keeps the temperature in the Church perfect all the time. In this kind of an environment, the Church of Jesus Christ can produce fruit unto holiness.

2. The membership of the Church cannot survive without Jesus Christ.

“Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us,

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God” (Hebrews 12:1, 2).

Jesus, as the “author and finisher of our faith,” has complete authority over our spiritual life. In John 14:6 Jesus tells us “no man comes to the Father but by Me.” Without Jesus, there is no salvation. There are many places in the Bible that bears this out. As good as we may be, without Jesus, we can do nothing of lasting value. The beautiful thing is, with Jesus, “I can do all things” (Philippians 4:13).

3. The health of the Church of Jesus Christ must be maintained by a cooperative operation of Jesus Christ and His saints in this world.

“We then, as workers together with him, beseech you also that you receive not the grace of God in vain” (2 Corinthians 6:1).

When we are “connected” to Jesus in a new birth, we are given the wonderful privilege of working with Him in His vineyard. This is a delightful experience as you feel Him near you every day. It is so great to be a worker with Him.

4. A Church must store up spiritual food for times when it must walk by faith and obedience even when it does not “feel” like doing so.

“For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed on with our house which is from heaven: if so be that being clothed we shall not be found naked. For we that are in this tabernacle do groan, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed on, that mortality might be swallowed up of life. Now He that has wrought us for the selfsame thing is God, who also has given unto us the earnest of the Spirit. Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, while we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord: (For we walk by faith, not by sight:) we are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord. Wherefore we labor, that, whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him. For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that everyone may receive the things done in his body, according to that he has done, whether it be good or bad. Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made manifest unto God; and I trust also are made manifest in your consciences” (2 Corinthians 5:1-11 ET).

Sometimes you have things that come into your life that makes you question whether God is with you. You wonder if He has forsaken you. When the battle gets hard, hang on to God's promises. This is the reason it is so important to have a daily quiet time with the Lord. This will help you get through the hard times when they come. Whatever we have to go through, it will be worth it all to be with Jesus in His eternal kingdom. Hold on! Keep in there! "Sing unto the Lord, O you saints of His, and give thanks at the remembrance of His holiness. For His anger endures but a moment; in His favor is life: weeping may endure for a night, but joy comes in the morning" (Psalm 30:4, 5 ET).

5. A member of the Church cannot produce fruit unto holiness without being joined to the rest of the Church of Jesus Christ.

"Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for He is faithful that promised;) and let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works: not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as you see the day approaching. For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries" (Hebrews 10:23-27 ET).

You are not a "one man show." You need other believers. The Church is a fellowship of believers. It is supportive of each of its members. Especially those who cannot help themselves and are not able to return the favors we give them. See 1 Thessalonians 4 and 5 for some advice on how we support one another. This is very important for the Church as it produces fruit unto holiness.

6. You can graft a born-again Gentile into God's original Jewish Church if they are of the same spiritual nature.

"For I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify my office: if by any means I may provoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might save some of them. For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead? For if the first-fruit be holy, the lump is also holy: and if the root be holy, so are the branches. And if some of the branches be broken off, and you, being a wild olive tree, were grafted in among them, and with them partake of the root and fatness of the olive tree; boast not against the branches. But if you boast, you bear

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

not the root, but the root you. You will say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in. Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and you stand by faith. Be not high-minded, but fear: for if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest He also spare not you. Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward you, goodness, if you continue in His goodness: otherwise you also shall be cut off. And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again” (Romans 11:13-23 ET).

As you can see in the above Scripture, God has opened the door for everyone to be saved from their sins and to be a part of the family of God. God does not have any favorites. If a person turns from sins and is grafted into the vine, that person will be saved regardless of his nationality or color of skin.

7. Old Saints of God and new Babes of Christ are necessary to have in the same Church.

We need mature Christians in our Churches to disciple the new ones. It is good for the young Christians to learn from the Old Saints who have the experience and faithfulness that serves as an example to them. This also helps the Old Saints, who feel they cannot do much, to realize how important they are in God’s Family.

8. The old Saints of God provide a framework to hold up the new Babes in Christ.

“But speak you the things which become sound doctrine: that the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience. The aged women likewise, that they be in behavior as becomes holiness, not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things; that they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, to be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed. Young men likewise exhort to be sober minded. In all things showing yourself a pattern of good works: in doctrine showing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity, sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you. Exhort servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please them well in all things; not answering again; not purloining, but showing all good fidelity; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things” (Titus 2:1-10 ET).

Seeing the Church is “the pillar and ground of the truth,” it is absolutely

necessary we have these dear saints to help us stay on track. It is getting to the place where the old standards of holiness are being scoffed at, and those upholding them are labeled, or should I say branded, as people who are holding up progress. They are called “legalists, trouble-makers, old fogies,” and other such things. The best interest of our Churches would be for them to learn from these dear people. Let them help you!

9. A Church can be eternally damaged by its carnal members.

“And I, brothers, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ. I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto you were not able to bear it, neither yet now are you able For you are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are you not carnal, and walk as men? For while one says, “I am of Paul;” and another, “I am of Apollos;” are you not carnal?” (1 Corinthians 3:1-4 ET).

We need baby Christians. We do not discard babies when they cause messes we have to clean up. However, we expect the babies to grow up; to become mature; to make progress as the years go by. If they do not, we refer to them as being retarded or maladjusted. The same is true in the Church. We want and need the babies. The trouble comes when we have fifty-year-old babies—people who have never gone “on unto holiness” and are still making messes for the rest of us to clean up. These people need to be disciplined sharply by the Church. We cannot allow them to continue to tear down everything God is building up.

10. Ungodliness must be removed from the Church membership for it to produce fruit unto holiness properly.

“It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father’s wife. And you are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that has done this deed might be taken away from among you. For I verily, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, concerning him that has so done this deed, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when you are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, to deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. Your glorying is not good. Know you not that a little leaven leavens the whole lump? Purge out therefore the old leaven, that you may be a new lump, as you are unleavened. For even Christ our

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Passover is sacrificed for us: therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth. I wrote unto you in an epistle not to company with fornicators: yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must you needs go out of the world. But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such an one no not to eat. For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? Do not you judge them that are within? But them that are without God judges. Therefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person” (1 Corinthians 5:1-13 ET).

“And not by his coming only, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent mind toward me; so that I rejoiced the more. For though I made you sorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the same epistle has made you sorry, though it were but for a season. Now I rejoice, not that you were made sorry, but that you sorrowed to repentance: for you were made sorry after a godly manner, that you might receive damage by us in nothing. For godly sorrow works repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world works death. For behold this selfsame thing, that you sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yes, what clearing of yourselves, yes, what indignation, yes, what fear, yes, what vehement desire, yes, what zeal, yes, what revenge! In all things you have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter. Wherefore, though I wrote unto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear unto you. Therefore we were comforted in your comfort: yes, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all. For if I have boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed; but as we spoke all things to you in truth, even so our boasting, which I made before Titus, is found a truth. And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilst he remembers the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling you received him. I rejoice therefore that I have confidence in you in all things” (2 Corinthians 7:7-16 ET).

“But I determined this with myself, that I would not come again to you in heaviness. For if I make you sorry, who is he then that makes me glad, but the same which is made sorry by me? And I wrote this same unto you, lest, when I

came, I should have sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoice; having confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all. For out of much affliction and anguish of heart I wrote unto you with many tears; not that you should be grieved, but that you might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you. But if any have caused grief, he has not grieved me, but in part: that I may not overcharge you all. Sufficient to such a man is this punishment, which was inflicted of many. So that contrariwise you ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow. Wherefore I beseech you that you would confirm your love toward him. For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether you be obedient in all things. To whom you forgive any thing, I forgive also: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for your sakes forgave I it in the person of Christ; lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices" (2 Corinthians 2:1-11 ET).

Anyone who thinks they have problems in their church should read 1st and 2nd Corinthians. They seemed to have every kind of a spiritual problem that could be found. The Scripture above shows how they handled a problem of gross fornication in their Church. Here are some things that may help in dealing with gross sin in your Church.

1. Make sure of what sin you are dealing with. This is very important, because the Church is to be a redemptive fellowship. We do not want to destroy the wicked one. We want the person to repent of the sin and to be restored to our fellowship.

2. Let the person or persons know why the discipline is being executed. We want people to understand that the reason we are giving discipline is out of a spirit of love for them and God.

3. Ask God to forgive you for allowing this wickedness in your fellowship. In doing this, you will show the person you are sharing in the blame for his sins.

4. Break fellowship with the person with a way to come back into fellowship. Let him know that when real repentance is shown fellowship will be restored.

5. Everyone in the fellowship must carry through on this. Anyone who breaks the bond of fellowship will also be disciplined along with the wicked one.

6. Fast and pray for the one who has or is doing the wicked deed that is being disciplined.

7. When the person repents, bring him/her back into the fellowship. Throw a party and completely forgive the wicked person. All people who were involved

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

should publicly express their love and forgiveness to one another. In addition, the whole Church should express their forgiveness and willingness to be a support so that this sin will not be a stumbling block in the future.

11. The Church of Jesus Christ needs to go through regular times of pruning out ungodly members to have a good witness to the world.

We cannot be too careful. It is very important that we do not allow ungodly people to get into our Christian fellowship. Sure, we want ungodly people to attend our church services. However, we cannot allow them to be governing members. Only people who are living a holy life are to be the leaders in our churches. The church is not a worldly organization. It is a living organism. It is the fellowship of the redeemed. Be alert! Keep the church clean. Preach the Word. Encourage your friends and neighbors to join you so you can help them get saved and sanctified. Do not allow them to “take over the church.” If such has happened, have a “house cleaning” as prescribed in point 10 above.

12. Church Pruning requires a plan that will remove detrimental member from it.

“Moreover if your brother shall trespass against you, go and tell him his fault between you and him alone: if he shall hear you, you have gained you brother. But if he will not hear you, then take with you one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto you as a heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven” (Matthew 18:15-18 ET).

1. Before an issue gets to the church, the offended party should try to work out the problem with the offender. This should be done in secret. It should not be blabbed all over the neighborhood.

2. If this fails to resolve the problem, then you should get one or two people to go with you to try to help you get things worked out among you. These people should not blab it all over the neighborhood. It is only between them.

3. If this fails to work out a proper solution, then it is to be taken to the Church. Then the Church can pray about it. They can enter the process of bringing forth a solution. At this point, the Church should follow the steps listed in point 10 above.

4. If the person refuses to listen to the church after it has carefully attempted a

solution, they treat the person like a heathen. You do not need to pray for the person any more. He has chosen the path of an apostate. Spend your time working with people who want to follow God. Do not waste your time wearing yourself out on a few people who are determined to follow the Devil regardless of how much God has worked with them to repent and do the right thing.

13. The Church can survive without dried-up, ungodly Church members even if they have been the “backbone” of the church in its organizational and financial support.

“But you shall receive power, after that the Holy Spirit is come upon you: and you shall be witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth” (Acts 1:8 ET).

“Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, saying, ‘I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood.’ And they said, ‘What is that to us? See you to that.’ And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself. And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, ‘It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.’ And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter’s field, to bury strangers in. Wherefore that field was called, ‘The field of blood, unto this day.’ Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, “And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value; and gave them for the potter’s field, as the Lord appointed me” (Matthew 27:3-10 ET).

The Church has always had those who come into it with a motive to corrupt it. The Devil has always done everything he can to get into the church and bring disgrace to it. Judas was one of the twelve apostles, and yet after the same opportunity as the other disciples, he still went the way of the Devil. This did not stop the Church. They replaced him and went on to Pentecost. (Acts 1:16 to 2:4) What the Church needs today is a “house cleaning” that will help us to get in one accord in one place so we can get the glory of God back in our Churches.

14. The fruit of holiness is produced in the dedicated Church membership through the inspiration of the Holy Spirit.

“But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. And they that

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another" (Galatians 5:22- 26 ET).

"And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation works patience; and patience, experience; and experience, hope: and hope makes not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit which is given unto us" (Romans 5:3-5 ET).

The Holy Spirit gives us God's love that enables us to bring fruit unto holiness. The crying need of the Church today is to have its own personal Pentecost. Without the fruit of holiness, the Church will be powerless to combat the evils of our day or bring people to the Lord.

15. The fruit of holiness is used for "food" to edify the body of Christ and to attract would be members.

"Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another" (Romans 14:19 KJV).

"Even so you, forasmuch as you are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that you may excel to the edifying of the church" (1 Corinthians 14:12 ET).

"For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ: that we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; but speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: from whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplies, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, makes increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love" (Ephesians 4:12-16 ET).

"Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers" (Ephesians 4:29 KJV).

"Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do" (1 Timothy 1:4 KJV).

"Let no man despise your youth; but be you an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity" (1 Timothy 4:12 ET).

The Church is to be a lighthouse in this dark world. We can only do this as we edify one another in the Lord. When the world sees the Church displaying God's love to one another it will be drawn to our Lord Jesus Christ. Remember, it is Jesus Who is building His Church. If you love Him, you will also love everyone else.

16. The fruit of holiness must be manifested in our lives before the Word of God is exposed for proper planting into the world.

The seed is in the fruit. When the fruit is eaten then the seed is exposed for planting. People will not be attracted to God through His Holy Word until the Church leaves a good taste in people's spiritual mouth. A good man, full of the Holy Spirit and of faith will draw people to the Lord. "For he was a good man, and full of the Holy Spirit and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord" (Acts 11:24 ET).

17. Only one Church is produced by the Word of God.

Jesus did not say, "Upon this rock I will build my Churches." Everywhere the Church is talked about in the Bible it is always in the singular. God only has one Church. This Church is not a denomination. As you will see in "The Church That Satan's Slaves Built," denominations have been used of the Devil to divide the body of Christ. The real Church is made up of those who are on the Solid Rock, Christ Jesus, as the Son of God. Jesus is the Rock, not Peter or anyone else. Any Church built on a man is part of "The Church That Satan's Slaves Built." It may start out good, but sooner or later, it is going to fall if it is not built on Jesus Christ. If the church denies the deity of Jesus, it is not Jesus' Church.

18. The Word of God brings forth the same kind of a Church of Jesus Christ that produced it.

Only life can bring life into this world. It is the same way with the Church. If it is not alive in Christ Jesus, Who is our life, it can only bring forth a dead Church. Jesus is the Word (John 1:1-3). That Word is our God. He most certainly is not the brother of Satan as the Mormon Church tells us. He is more than a man. This Word "became flesh and dwelt among us" (John 1:14).

When we become Christians, we become a "new creation" in Christ Jesus. "Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who has

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

reconciled us to Himself by Jesus Christ, and has given to us the ministry of reconciliation; to wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto Himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and has committed unto us the word of reconciliation. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be you reconciled to God. For He has made Him to be sin for us, Who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him" (2 Corinthians 5:17-21ET).

19. The Word of God is the regenerative life of the Church of Jesus Christ.

"But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His name: which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father), full of grace and truth" (John 1:12,-14 ET).

The only spiritual life that we have is the life we receive through Jesus. (Read John 3:16, 17.)

20. If a church member backslides, stops producing fruit unto holiness and refuses to come back to God before dying, that member will burn in the fires of hell forever.

"For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Spirit, and have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, if they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put Him to an open shame. For the earth which drinks in the rain that comes oft upon it, and brings forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receives blessing from God: but that which bears thorns and briers is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned" (Hebrews 6:4-8).

"For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: of how much sorer punishment, suppose you, shall he be thought worthy, who has trodden under foot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and has done despite unto the Spirit of grace? For we know Him that has said, 'Vengeance belongs unto Me, I will

recompense,' says the Lord. And again, 'The Lord shall judge His people.' It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the Living God" (Hebrews 10:26-31 ET).

No one who tells you that once you are saved you can never be lost and go to hell has read these Scriptures and several others that say you can. It does not make any difference how many Greek and Hebrew words he can impress you with. God has no pets. If you backslide and do not repent and get back to God and His ways, you will go to hell and be there forever. It is best to be safe and live a holy life in this life. Love God and others now. Do not look back. Look unto Jesus. He is able to keep us from falling. No one can take you out of Jesus' hand except you. If you are lost, at the last, you have no one to blame except yourself.

Conclusion: Jesus tells us in John 15 that He is the vine and His disciples are the branches. We have shown what this relationship involves in detail. If a disciple stops producing fruit unto holiness, he is cut off from the vine and is burned. Therefore, if a branch stops producing, it stands to reason; it was producing at one time. What do you think? Being a child of God is dependent on being attached to the vine (Jesus), seeing without Him we can do nothing. If we get unattached, we are in danger of being eternally lost. God's grace is able to keep you attached to Jesus! It is wonderful to be attached to Jesus! He supplies all our needs. Read John 15 again!

IV. A Flock of Sheep With the Good Shepherd

Bible Background: Numbers 27:15-17; Psalm 23:1-6; Isaiah 40:1-31; Jeremiah 50:6, 7; Ezekiel 34:1-31; Zechariah 10:1-12; Zechariah 13:6, 7; Matthew 9:35-38; John 10:1-18; Hebrews 13:20, 21; 1 Peter 2:21-25; 1 Peter 5:1-11.

Text Scripture: "He shall feed His flock like a shepherd: He shall gather the lambs with His arm, and carry them in His bosom, and shall gently lead those that are with young" (Isaiah 40:11 ET).

Purpose: To show that when we are in the hands of Jesus, Our Good Shepherd, we are in good hands!

Introduction: When we put our lives in the hands of man, we are not sure how things are going to turn out. We put our savings in the stock market and lose our wealth. We put our trust in the medical profession and many times we end up maimed for life. The politician's hands are a poor place in which to place our lives. The educational system's hands are not a safe place in which to place our lives. In many instances, it is not safe to place our lives in the hands of church

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

leaders. We see more and more our lives are not safe in the hands of our judicial system. I could give an endless list of the people and systems of sinful mankind, which, if we placed our lives in their hands, would be very dangerous for us.

This is not so with your Lord Jesus Christ. Your life is very safe in His hands. Allow me the privilege to show you how superior your Good Shepherd's hands are to man's.

The sheep: By nature, sheep are stupid, filthy and defenseless. They must have someone to care for them. Without proper care they will die. A sheep must be led, not driven. They only drink by still waters. Sometimes sheep like to chase butterflies. When they do this, they can stray from the flock. This will put them in danger's way. Sometimes a sheep has to be hurt so it will depend on its shepherd more. Sheep can be easily misled.

The Good Shepherd: He will care for all the needs of His sheep. He will protect His sheep with His life. He prepares the pasture for His sheep before He takes them to pasture. He keeps His sheep in the fold for their protection and care. He carries the little lambs when need be. He delights in His sheep. He faces many hardships to care for His sheep.

Spiritually speaking, Jesus is the Good Shepherd: The first thing we need to understand, Jesus is God in the Flesh. "The Word became flesh and dwelt among us" (John 1:1-17). Read Isaiah 40 to see how great is our God. He is all-powerful, all-knowing, all-caring. He is there to help us all the time. He is our Good Shepherd, Who cares for His sheep with His life. He knows what we need and leads us in good paths. He is willing to take the dumb, dirty, defenseless sheep and lead them. We are the sheep that went astray. Jesus is the Good Shepherd that lay down His life for His sheep. Jesus lay down His life for His sheep that they might have life and have it more abundantly (John 10:10).

A look at Psalm 23: **The Lord** "And the Lord passed by before him, and proclaimed, The Lord, The Lord God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and that will by no means clear the guilty; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and to the fourth generation" (Exodus 34:6, 7 KJV). **is my Shepherd** (this makes it personal) **I shall not want** (because God "supplies our every need according to His riches in glory" Philippians 4:19). **He makes me lie down in green pastures:** (without fear or hunger pains) **He leads me by still waters.** (He gives us rest – Matthew 11:28-30 and living water – Psalm 1:3). **He restores my**

soul: (transforms – Romans 12:1, 2). **He leads me in the paths of righteousness for His name's sake.** (He always leads us in the right way to bring glory and honor to Him – 1 Corinthians 10:31). **Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil:** (We are safe in the arms of Jesus.) **Your rod** (to fight off the enemies) **and Your staff** (to keep you in the fold) **they comfort me.** (It is comforting to know Jesus is looking out for you.) **You prepare a table before me in the presence of my enemies:** (Jesus inspects the pasture to make sure it is safe.) **You anoint my head with oil:** (to make sure no false doctrine gets in your mind) **My cup runs over.** (unspeakable joy – 1 Peter 1:8, 9). **Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life:** That the communication of your faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus (Philemon 1:6). **and I will dwell in the house of the LORD for ever.** (Jesus is our Shepherd in His household forever.)

God calls some sheep to be His under-shepherds: If you have been called by the Lord to shepherd His sheep, you are under a great obligation to be an example to the flock He has given you. You are to live a life your sheep can safely follow. Do not be the kind of a pastor that says, “Do as I say, not as I do.” You are not to “lord it over” your flock, but rather follow Jesus in all He leads you to do. You are to serve, not be served. You are to give of yourself for your flock. You do not go around looking for all the benefits of being a pastor. You are willing to spend and be spent for your flock. You are willing to “preach the Word” even when it is not popular to do so. You are to “speak the truth in love.” Your model is not the latest “fad” that comes your way. You are to be a model in devotion to God, in prayer, in speech, in faith and faithfulness, in sacrifice or self-denial, in love, in hope, in living a holy life, in handling your finances, in paying your bills, in loving your family, in seeking the salvation of the lost and the sanctification of believers, in caring for those who cannot help themselves, in encouraging your flock to grow in the “grace and knowledge” of Jesus, in forgiving your enemies, in keeping the commandments of God, in upholding the teachings of the Bible to obey God rather than man and to glory in God; your Savior, Sanctifier, and Keeper. Above all, you are to love God with all your heart, mind, soul and strength and love your neighbor as yourself. 1 and 2 Timothy and Titus show you how to conduct yourself in God’s household of faith!

Conclusion: Sheep are much like people. Without our Shepherd, the Lord Jesus Christ, we are totally lost. It is not in us to live a holy life, seeing we are all lost in

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

sin's dark night. We are prone to stray into all kinds of hurtful and deceitful lusts that prove to be our downfall. Without Jesus, we do not know the way, the truth or real life. Jesus is the only One Who cares for the sheep. All other voices are only crying in the night.

It is a real temptation for our spiritual leaders (under-shepherds) to follow the latest "fad" for church growth or theological teaching. Too many times, it turns out we have the blind leading the blind. Only a called-out ministry that is anointed by God's Holy Spirit is worthy of a pastor in Jesus' Church! If you are not a minister called of the Lord to shepherd His sheep, get out of the Church of Jesus Christ. You have scattered the sheep long enough. You have let the devil devour the flock of God long enough. Quit promoting man's church in Jesus' Church right now. If you are a really good under-shepherd then take courage. May the Lord bless you in a most gracious way. May everything you do prosper. Keep the faith. Be faithful. Do not get discouraged. Keep close to your Good Shepherd.

V. Jesus as the Head of a United Body

Bible Background: Ephesians 1:13-23; Ephesians 4:11-16; Ephesians 5: 23, 24; Colossians 1:18; Colossians 2:9-23; Romans 12:4-21; 1 Corinthians 6:15-20; 1 Corinthians 12:1-31; Ephesians 4:17-25.

Text Scripture: "And has put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is His body, the fullness of Him that fills all in all" (Ephesians 1:22, 23 ET).

Purpose: To compare the body of "The Church That Satan's Slaves Built" with the body of "The Church That Christ Built."

Introduction: You have never seen this done before. This is new to me also. Each opposing church has a body. Let us compare the image in the Book of Daniel with the Body of Christ. This contrast should make you appreciate what God is doing in this world through Christ Jesus our Gracious Lord.

The golden head of Daniel's image can be compared to Jesus as the Head of the Church! As Satan's man's church had been formulating from the beginning of time, so Christ's church was doing the same. Man's church started with the tower of Babel. Christ's church started with Abraham being called out of Ur in the area of Babylon. Man's church officially started with the Kingdom of Babylon. Christ officially started His Jewish church when Moses brought the Israelites out of Egypt into the Promised Land. Christ's worldwide church started when He came

into the world, finished the work His Father sent Him to do, went back to Heaven and sent His Holy Spirit on the day of Pentecost. As Satan has masterminded man's church, so Christ has masterminded His Church. Christ is pure in that He did not sin. Satan's church that man built is fool's gold. As Satan is the one who controls man's church, so Christ controls His Church.

As the Medeo-Persian Empire gave man's church a heart and soul, so the Church Fathers did for Christ's church. Many of the false religions were originated at the time of the Medeo-Persian Empire. Christ's church had a hard time keeping itself polished during the time of the Church Fathers, as many enemies of the cross of Christ were seeking to tarnish the pure Word and work of Christ. They had to formulate creeds and doctrines to turn away many floodgates of wickedness.

As the Greek Empire further advanced Satan's slaves' church in the areas of philosophy and science, so the Gnostics and the Stoics did to Christ's church. When this happened, Christ's church was placed in the wilderness. It was there for centuries. We still have this today. We call it the liberal or "emerging" church. All the while Jesus has had His pure church that is without "spot or wrinkle." We call these the Born-again, Spirit-filled believers.

As the Roman Empire put legs and feet on Satan's slaves' church, so the Catholic Church put legs and feet on Christ's Church. As the Roman Kingdom made man's church universal, so the Catholic Church made Christ church universal. As the Roman Empire ruled the whole world, so did the Catholic Church. As the Roman Empire fell from within, so did the Catholic Church. The Catholic Church divided into East and West. All the time this was going on within the Catholic Church, Jesus had His pure Church in His underground Church. You see, the Catholic Church was not Christ's Church anymore. It was overcome from within. Christ's true church was in hiding again. Then there was a flood of church denominations. Some were pure, while some were filled with false doctrines and false prophets. We are told in Daniel, when iniquity has reached its limit at the time of the Roman Empire, a stone made without hands (Christ's Church) will smash man's church and fill the earth. The gates of hell will not prevail against Christ's Church. Any day now, we may hear the trumpet sound, the dead in Christ will rise, the true Christians will be given new bodies, and Jesus' Kingdom will be established on a New Earth wherein righteousness and true holiness dwells.

Conclusion: From all outward appearances, man's church has prevailed over Christ's Church. It appears that at every turn in the path of life, Christ's Church

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

has suffered loss at the hands of the devil and his crowd. Where is Christ's Church today? What has Christ's Church gained down through the ages? Maybe the answer to these questions is that Christ's Church is alive and well in the habitation of His people. His crowd has never been the majority. He has a little flock. He has a glorious church that is a precious stone. The time will come when this will all change. This precious stone will become a great mountain and rule the world. Are you a member of the body of Christ or a member of the body of Satan? Big is not always better. Read the last chapters in the Bible—Revelation 19-22.

VI. A Fellowship of the Faithful

Bible Background: Numbers 6:1-7; Psalm 94:1-23; Acts 2:41-47; 1 Corinthians 1:4-10; 1 Corinthians 10:20-24; 2 Corinthians 6:14-16; 2 Corinthians 8:1-5; Ephesians 3:5-12; Ephesians 5:11-14; Philippians 1:5-7; Philippians 2:1-8; Philippians 3:7-15; 1 John 1:3-7.

Text Scripture: "God is faithful, by whom you were called unto the fellowship of His Son Jesus Christ our Lord" (1 Corinthians 1:9 ET).

Purpose: Christian fellowship leads to a loving, caring attitude toward their brothers and sisters in the Lord.

Introduction: Christians have a communication with God and their fellow believers that is above the world's system. Their fellowship is based on a self-sacrificing, self-giving type love that treats others with respect. To keep themselves pure, they limit their close friends to those who love God and others. This gives the impression to others that they feel they are better than others. Such is not the case. They only want to "keep themselves unspotted from the world" so they can glorify God and help others.

1. They abhor works of wickedness. They will not participate in ungodly practices. They do not seek out or follow with those who are doing such works of darkness as shown in the above list of Scriptures.
2. They reprove such works of darkness. This is done so others will take note of these practices as being sinful. This separates the good from the bad in our society.
3. They do not have communion with ungodly people. The communion (Lord's Supper) is for those who love God and others.
4. They will suffer loss for the sake of Jesus and the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, rather than enjoying "the pleasures of sin for a season." Some people, who

have nothing to lose, think Christians should eat, drink and be merry with them. The Christian's song is, "Take This World, But Give Me Jesus." When Christians refuse to follow the crowd, they will be berated, in some instances misused, and misrepresented.

5. They will make lasting relationships within the Christian community. Their love for God and others is lasting. They will pray for the sick, visit the lonely, take care of the social rejects, and be zealous of all other good works of love.

6. They spend time with God every day. They love to talk to God in prayer and show devotion to Him. There is something about having fellowship with the God of the universe that cannot be put into words. You have to do it to understand it. God is the most wonderful being in the whole universe.

7. They have a peace and hope that the world knows nothing about in their lives. They have no fear. Perfect love has cast out fear. They have no anxieties. They have cast their cares on the Lord Who cares for them. They do not worry about tomorrow. They know God will take care of them. They are not restless. They are resting in Jesus, the best anchor of their soul.

Conclusion: The Christian life is not just so many do's and don'ts. The real Christian is grounded in a complete, covenanted, loving relationship with God and others of like-minded faith. This makes them love everyone. They would do anything in the world to be a blessing to friend and foe alike. They want everyone to enjoy what they have found through their Christian fellowship. This is the reason they are always talking about Jesus and His people. This is the reason they invite people to come to church with them. They are in love with Jesus!

VII. A Chosen Generation of Born Again Believers

Bible Background: Psalm 33:12; Psalm 89:1-52; Psalm 145:1-21; Exodus 15:2; Exodus 15:13; Isaiah 32:15-20; Ephesians 2:19-22; John 3:3; 1 Peter 1:23; Deuteronomy 7:1-26; Deuteronomy 14:1-29; Psalm 105:42-45; Matthew 12:18-21; Matthew 20:16; John 15:16, 19; Acts 9:15, 16; 1 Corinthians 1:26-31; Ephesians 1:1-14; 2 Thessalonians 2:13, 14; James 2:5; 1 Peter 2:4, 5; Revelation 14:17; Galatians 6:10; Matthew 5:9.

Text Scripture: "For through Him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father. Now therefore you are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God; and are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the Chief

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Corner Stone; in Whom all the building fitly framed together grows unto an holy temple in the Lord: in Whom you also are built together for an habitation of God through the Spirit” (Ephesians 2:18-22 ET).

Purpose: To show that Christians are a part of a generation of faithful followers of Jesus Christ.

Introduction: When you think of a generation, the thing that comes to mind is a person’s genealogy. You want to look up the family tree. You want to find out all you can about your ancestors. With God, there are no grandchildren. We are all children. God’s generation is all His children that have been adopted into His family. We are talking about people who have experienced a new birth. Old things have passed away and all life takes on a new meaning with new relationships. Our text scripture sums it up very well.

1. For through Him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father (Ephesians 2:18). Now Jews and Gentiles have the same privileges. There is a chain of command in this verse from Jesus to the Holy Spirit to the Father. Jesus bought our redemption, the Holy Spirit applies the redemption to us and the Father planned it. Therefore, we have access to the Father through the Son by the Holy Spirit.

2. Now therefore you are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God; (Ephesians 2:19). Through this operation of God, we become fellow citizens with the saints in the household of God. You are a full member in God’s household with all its privileges and responsibilities.

3. And are built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the Chief Corner Stone (Ephesians 2:20). Our relationship with God is on solid footing. Jesus Christ is the Chief Corner Stone. The apostles and prophets laid down the foundation, which we have found to be Jesus Christ. Jesus is the whole story in the Christian’s journey. It is not about a particular Christian regardless of how mightily he is being used of God. It is all about Christ Jesus and Him crucified. It is about Jesus rising from the dead. It is about Jesus ascending into heaven and now interceding for you and me.

4. In Whom, all the building fitly framed together grows unto a holy temple

in the Lord: (Ephesians 2:21 ET). The Bible teaches us that we are the temples of the Holy Spirit (1 Corinthians 6:19). When you abide in God and His Word abide in you, you are in perfect harmony with the household of God. We are in one accord. This enables us to grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ (2 Peter 3:18).

5. In Whom you also are built together for a habitation of God through the Spirit (Ephesians 2:22). People do better when they have others to encourage them in their walk with the Lord. Sure, you can worship God anywhere, but you also need fellow Christians to associate within your faithful walk with your God. The more fire you have the warmer you are. We are living in a cold world. We need all the “fire” we can get. Without the warmth of other Christians, we will cool off and die. We really do need one another!

6. Jesus chose us to be conformed into His image. When we were lost sheep going astray and could not help ourselves Jesus came to bring us back out of harms way (Romans 5). When we wanted to do the right thing, we could not break the chains of sin from us. We were lost in a forest of evil monsters that only mocked our cry for help. Then Jesus came to us, broke the chains of sin, and brought us into His gracious family. He gave us a song and a peace that the world could never take away. Thus, we are a chosen generation.

7. Israel is God’s example of His chosen generation. I have several Scripture references above that will help you see how to conduct yourself in the household of God. In God’s household, everyone serves. Jesus is the “boss!” If we love Him, we keep His commandments, including the 10 from which wicked people, in their twisted sense of reality, are trying to turn us away. Read the references above to get a picture of the real world of the spirit life.

Conclusion: We have been in other households that have left us high and dry. They have proved to be dead-end roads. Our world is under the curse of sin. Only Jesus can give us life and give it to us more abundantly. We desperately need to go to Jesus for our every need. The air is fresh and the sunshine is bright in our Father’s House. If you will humbly come to God through Jesus, He will lift you into heavenly place today.

VIII. A Peculiar People Looking For An Eternal City

Bible Background: Exodus 19:5, 6; Deuteronomy 14:2; Deuteronomy 26:18, 19; Psalms 135:3-6; Titus 2:11-14; 1 Peter 2:9, 10; Matthew 5:14-16; Hebrews 11:8-10.

Text Scripture: “Who gave Himself for us, that He might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto Himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works” (Titus 2:14 ET).

Purpose: To show the thing that makes God’s people different (peculiar) is their purified life that produces fruit unto holiness.

Introduction: A pure heart and life is not automatic. Something must be done to make us holy. God did something. Let us see how God takes a dirty sheep and cleans it up to “win a blue ribbon” at His great judgment day.

Who (This is none other than the Lord Jesus Christ. He is the second person of the triune God. He is perfect God/perfect man. He is both the Son of Man and Son of God. He is the great I AM. He is the Lover of your soul. He is the Rose of Sharon, the Bright and Morning Star, the Sun of Righteousness, the King of kings and Lord of lords, the Ancient of Days, the Living Word. He is everything that is beautiful to behold.)

gave Himself (Love always gives, hate always takes. Jesus gave Himself for us because He loves us with an eternal love. He does not want anyone to be lost in an eternal hellfire and brimstone. He gave us His all so we could have it all.)

for us (Lost sheep, haters of God, sinful, helpless to help ourselves, proud, unholy, outcasts, rebels. However, His love for us would not let Him sit and watch us destroy ourselves and others.)

that He might redeem us (Set us free from the hopeless condition we are in. He did not send someone else to redeem us. He came to do this Himself. He was the only One Who could.)

from all iniquity (Violation of the law, lawlessness. He came to save us from a runaway lifestyle that is destroying everything that is good and right for us and our fellow human beings. He calls us to forsake our selfish ways to receive the true riches of life (Proverbs 28:13). He wants to redeem us from all lawlessness. He wants us to be totally free. He wants us not to have any “monkeys on our back.” He does not want us to have any “hang-ups.” He wants to set us completely free so we can enjoy life to the fullest extent. The only drawback is our unwillingness to let Him be our Lord and Savior. Titus 2:12, 13 show us how.)

and purify {To cleanse from all defilement of the flesh and spirit so we can perfect holiness in the respect of God (2 Corinthians 7:1). This is the crying need of the Church today. We need to walk in the light as He is in the light so we can be cleansed from all sin (1 John 1:7). To get this done we must present our redeemed life to God. (Romans 12:1, 2) Then we will be free to serve Jesus (Romans 8:1-3).}

unto Himself (For Jesus and His Kingdom. Whatever is for Jesus is going to be a blessing for everyone else. Jesus does not ask us to do anything that is going to harm us or anyone in our presence. We will love God with all our whole being and our neighbor as ourselves.)

a peculiar people (People that do not conform to the standards of the world, the flesh or the devil. These people are not like everyone else. They have the attitude of “in honor preferring one another.” They are honest. They are truthful. They are faithful to their promises. They will go out of their way to help others.)

zealous (On fire for God. They are unwilling to give up the good fight of faith. They will be quick to tell you the truth as it is revealed to them. These good people are ready to “give an answer of the hope that is in them.”)

of good works. (Things that build up rather than tear down. Good Works are God’s works. They are Holy Spirit directed works. You can tell people by their fruit. These people are producing much “fruit unto righteousness and true holiness.” Their greatest joy is to know they are pleasing to God. When you love Jesus, you become like Him. These people love Jesus.)

Conclusion: Jesus is looking for people who are looking for Him. They are looking for a Holy City, whose builder and maker is their God. They are preparing for that city. They are different from the normal run of people. They know some day their Lord will be coming back to this world to bring in His kingdom. This enables them to walk humbly with their God. The world, the flesh and the devil hate them. God and His people love them. Would you like to be one of them? Today could be the best day of your life. Come to Jesus just now!

IX. A Marriage Into a Royal Family

Bible Background: Isaiah 61:8-11; Isaiah 62:1-12; Jeremiah 2:32; Joel 2:12-32; Matthew 25:1-13; John 2:1-11; John 3:29-36; Revelation 21:2, 9; Revelation 22:11-17; Matthew 19:9; Ephesians 5:22-33; Revelation 19:7-9; Revelation 21:10-22:7; Genesis 24:1-67.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Text Scripture: “And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, ‘Come hither, I will show you the bride, the Lamb’s wife’” (Revelation 21:9 ET).

Purpose: To show the nature of the Bride of Christ as shown in the book of Revelation as the New Jerusalem.

Introduction: Paul refers to the bride of Christ as the Church without spot or wrinkle or any such thing. Daniel refers to a little stone made without hands, which hits the image of Satan’s slaves’ church, grinds it to powder, fills and rules the earth. Revelation 21:9 refers to the New Jerusalem as the Lamb’s wife. Let us compare the New Jerusalem with the Bride of Christ, His Holy Church in Revelation 21:10-22:7. Then we will compare the bride of Christ to Abraham sending his servant to find a bride for his son, Isaac.

The Bride of Christ Compared to the New Jerusalem

“And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high mountain, and showed me that great city, the Holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God” (Revelation 21:10). As the Holy Jerusalem is a great city from God, so the Bride of Christ, the Church, is a gift to the world from God.

“Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal;” (Revelation 21:11). The true Church of Christ is a very beautiful Bride. She is a pure virgin. There is no “spot or blemish” on her.

“And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel: on the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates. And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb” (Revelation 21:12-14). The wall separates the sacred from the secular. The Bride of Christ is a called-out people. As the pearly gates in the wall are three each on the four sides with a name of a tribe of Israel on each, so regardless of what direction you come from you must enter the Church of Jesus Christ via the Old Testament prophetic Word of God brought down to us by the tribes of Israel and fulfilled in the New Testament. The foundations of the wall of the City are the twelve apostles of the Lamb. The foundation of the church was laid down by the apostles. Jesus Christ is that foundation. Each apostle is a unique Jewel in Jesus’ foundation.

“And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. And the city lies foursquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs (1500 miles). The length, the breadth, and the height of it are equal” (Revelation 21:15, 16). The length, breadth and height of the city are each 1500 miles. This is 3,375,000,000 cubic miles for a cube or 1,125,000,000 for a pyramid. Either way, this is a very large number. God is “not willing that any perish” so there is enough room in the church for anyone who will come in to the city on God’s terms. All must repent and accept Jesus as their own personal Savior (2 Peter 3:9).

“And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits (216 feet), according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel. And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass. And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald; the fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst. And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass” (Revelation 21:17-21). Not only is the Church laid on a firm foundation, it is also pure gold. It is like transparent glass. There is nothing like this on earth. The beauty of the Bride of Christ is beyond our wildest imagination. The wall of the Church is 12 times 12. It is erected on the pure Word of God brought to us by “holy men of God as they were moved by His Holy Spirit.” Twelve is 7 plus 5. Seven is God’s perfect number and five is the number for law. The wall of the Church is God’s perfect law in both the Old and New Testaments.

“And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.” As Jesus is the Light of the world, so He is the Glorious Light in the Church. The light of the true Church cannot be hidden. “And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honor into it” (Revelation 21:22-24). Thus, the Church is a Holy Family, which is to become a great nation. Jesus is King of kings and Lord of lords.

“And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there” (Revelation 21:25). No darkness is in the True Church of Jesus Christ. It is filled with God’s Holy Spirit, the third person of the triune God.

“And they shall bring the glory and honor of the nations into it.” (This is repeated here for emphasis. We will reign under Jesus’ command in the Church of Christ with glory and honor.) “And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defiles, neither whatsoever works abomination, or makes a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb’s book of life” (Revelation 21:26, 27). As heaven is a prepared place for prepared people, so is the Church. Nothing that would defile it will be allowed to be a member of it. All abominable things must be forsaken if you are ever going to be Christ’s bride. Jesus will not

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

take second place in your devotions. You must commit yourself completely to Him and His kingdom work.

“And he showed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb” (Revelation 22:1). No one can survive without water. This water proceeds from the “throne of God and of the Lamb.” Only God has the water of life. It is refreshing to those who humble themselves under the mighty hand of God.

“In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations” (Revelation 22:2). Then there is the “tree of life” on either side of the “pure river of life.” This is for the healing of the nations who are the tribes of the True and Living God. The fruit of God’s holiness brings complete healing to His Church. Oh, how we need to be healed today! God’s fruit is not seasonal. You will not jump in and out of God’s grace. You will be established in His holiness by the fiery cleansing of His Holy Spirit. The fruit is year round.

“And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve Him:” (Revelation 22:3). If we are ever going to get out from under the curse of sin, we are going to have to serve God. The real Church of Christ has been delivered from sin. When we get saved, we are freed from the penalty of sin. At sanctification, we are freed from the power of sin. When we go to heaven in our glorified bodies, we will be free from the presence of sin.

“And they shall see His face; and His name shall be in their foreheads” (Revelation 22:4). “Blessed are the pure in heart for they shall see God.” We are to be “transformed by the renewing of our mind.” The Church is to bring people to a loving relationship with God right now.

“And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God gives them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever” (Revelation 22:5). The family of God is destined to reign with the Lord God forever. The greatest among us will be the one who serves God and others. We reign through service to God. When we do this there is no night, for God is our light.

And he said unto me, “These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent His angel to show unto His servants the things which must shortly be done. Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keeps the sayings of the prophecy of this book” (Revelation 22:6, 7).

Some day Jesus is coming to claim His bride. Church, keep faith in God and wait patiently for your wonderful Lord! His coming is near at hand.

Abraham sends his servant to find a bride for Isaac

As Abraham sent his servant to find a wife for his son, Isaac, so God the Father sent His Holy Spirit into the world to find a bride for Jesus, God the Father's Son. See the account of it in Genesis 24. Keep in mind this is not a direct parallel. God never gets old. He is calling out a bride for His Son from the world. Jesus is not going to have a physical family when the bride gets to heaven.

Conclusion: God the Father has sent His Holy Spirit into the world to bring out of it a spotless bride for God the Son. The New Jerusalem is a good example of what this bride is going to be like and the relationship with God she is going to enjoy throughout eternity.

X. A Royal Priesthood of the Faithful

Bible Background: Exodus 40:14, 15; Numbers 16:1-50; Numbers 18:1-32; Joshua 18:7; Ezra 2:61-63; Nehemiah 7:64-65; Nehemiah 13:22-31; Hebrews 7:1-28; Hebrews 8:1-13; Hebrews 9:1-28; Hebrews 10:1-39; 1 Peter 2:1-10; Hebrews 2:17, 18; Hebrews 4:9-16; Hebrews 5:1-10; Hebrews 6:16-20; Hebrews 13:8-17; Revelation 1:5, 6; Revelation 5:9, 10; Revelation 20:6.

Text Scripture: "And have made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth" (Revelation 5:10 ET).

Purpose: To show that the Church of Jesus Christ is a holy, royal priesthood of believers.

Introduction: There is a close connection between Jesus, our High Priest, and all believers being priests. It is the same as the relationship between the high priest and the Levitical priesthood.

1. In the Levitical priesthood, God called them to do service for the people. In the priesthood of believers, God calls people out of darkness into His marvelous light to minister for Him.

2. In the Levitical priesthood, Moses was the high priest. Jesus is the High Priest for the priesthood of believers.

3. The High Priest approached God in the most holy place. In addition, the Levites approached the High Priest for the people. Jesus goes into heaven for us to intercede for us and the children of God go to Jesus for the people.

4. In the Levitical priesthood, sin could not be taken away. In Jesus' priesthood, sin can be taken away.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

5. In the Levitical priesthood, mortal men were the priests. In Jesus' priesthood, the eternal Son of God is the High Priest and the redeemed are His co-priests.

6. The priesthood of Moses was based on the law. Jesus' priesthood is based on grace and truth.

7. Material gifts and sacrifices were presented to God by the Levitical priesthood. Spiritual gifts and sacrifices are presented to God by Jesus' priesthood.

8. People were obedient to God out of the fear of God's wrath in Moses' priesthood. People are obedient to God out of a spirit of love and gratitude in Jesus' priesthood.

9. In the priesthood of Moses, the blood of others was brought to God. Jesus brought His own blood to present to God.

10. Moses' priesthood provided stability to a nation of people redeemed from physical bondage. Jesus provides stability to a church of people redeemed from spiritual bondage.

11. Moses had an elect group that interceded for the people to God. Jesus has the whole church of believers who are His co-priests interceding to God through Himself.

12. In Moses' priesthood, being a priest was a duty. With Jesus, being a co-priest is a gracious privilege.

13. Moses' covenant was an impersonal distant obedience to the laws of God. Jesus' new covenant is a loving relational experience as we are brought near to God through the blood of Jesus.

14. Moses attempted to force sinful people to do God's will through a covenant of curses and blessings. Jesus takes care of the sin problem by delivering His people from all sin—actual and inbred.

Conclusion: The priesthood of believers consists of a loving, caring, sharing relationship with God. It is given to us as a free gift through the death, burial, resurrection and intercession of Jesus Christ, our wonderful Lord and Savior. We preach and teach the Word. We reach out in love to all peoples. We pray for those who are lost in sin's dark night. We encourage our fellow brothers and sisters in the Lord. We love God and others more every day. Getting to know Jesus and sharing His love with others is truly a wonderful privilege.

XI. A Holy Nation of God's Kingdom

Bible Background: Genesis 12:1-3; Genesis 15:13-16; Genesis 18:18; Genesis 35:10-12; Genesis 46:1-4; Exodus 19:5, 6; Leviticus 18:20-30; Leviticus 20:1-27; Deuteronomy 4:1-10; Proverbs 14:34; Isaiah 1:1-31; Jeremiah 7:28; Jeremiah 18:1-10; Ezekiel 37:21-28; Matthew 21:42-44; Acts 10:34, 35; Romans 10:18-21; 1 Peter 2:9, 10.

Scripture Text: “Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy” (1 Peter 2:10).

Purpose: To show what it is meant to be a Kingdom Church.

Introduction: The business of the Church of Jesus Christ is to make the world God's kingdom. We are to “seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness.” We are to pray “Your kingdom come, your will be done in earth as it is in heaven.” We are the kings of the King and lords of the Lord. We should “obey God rather than man.”

1. Jesus is the King of the kingdom. We owe our alliance to Him. He has the first and last word. His will is to be sought and obeyed always.

2. Jesus rules His kingdom in righteousness and true holiness. We are to be a holy people in His kingdom.

3. The Church is the “little stone” that becomes a great mountain (nation), fills, and rules the earth as expressed in Daniel 2:44, 45.

4. Jesus is establishing His kingdom on this earth through His Church. This can only be done as we follow the King in total faith and obedience.

5. Jesus' kingdom is ruled by the love of God being “shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit.” We love God and others completely.

6. In Jesus' kingdom, everyone serves everyone else. We look out for the needs of our fellow believers. We are especially careful to take care of the needs of those who cannot help themselves.

7. Jesus kingdom will not be fully realized until Jesus comes back to set up His kingdom on this earth. Until He comes, we are to “occupy” till He comes. We are to be the “salt” and “light” of this earth until Jesus comes.

Conclusion: When Jesus comes back, He will set up His kingdom on this earth. Heaven and earth will be one. The prayers of His people will be answered. Now we are preparing for His kingdom. Get ready to meet the King.

XII. An Army Fully Mobilized

Bible Background: 1 Samuel 17:1-58; Luke 11:22-28; Romans 13:12-14; 2 Corinthians 6:3-10; Ephesians 6:11-20; 2 Corinthians 10:3-6; 1 Timothy 1:18-20; 2 Timothy 2:1-10.

Text Scripture: “For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ; and having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled” (2 Corinthians 10:3-6 ET).

Purpose: To show the nature of God’s Army.

Introduction: The battle is not physical. It is spiritual. We are fighting for the minds and hearts of the whole human race. We are fighting a battle that is too big for us. God has fully equipped His army to fight His battle for Him. Jesus is our Commanding Officer in this battle. While we follow Jesus’ commands, we are assured of total victory. Some day we will fight our last battle and live in a land of perfect rest and peace forever.

Follow David’s example, as recorded in 1 Samuel 17:17-58, to kill the giants that rise up to defy the True and Living God where you are enlisted today.

1. Go to the battlefield under the command of your heavenly Father to refresh your fellow warriors in your family.
2. Find out what you will receive for killing the giant.
3. Realize there is a cause that will glorify God.
4. Do not let others, who have no vision, dampen your zeal for God.
5. Follow the regular order of command.
6. Do not try to wear someone else’s armor.
7. Use the talents God has given to you to “fight the good fight of faith.”
8. Let the whole world know you trust God for the victory.
9. Get a good perspective of the enemy. Realize the battle is against God.
10. Claim victory in the face of the enemy.
11. Use the enemy’s own weapon to finish the victory.
12. Hit the enemy at his weakest point.
13. Never give up. The victory is yours—claim it.
14. Give God the glory when He gives you the victory. Keep humble when God

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

allows you to have great success in His kingdom work. Remember this is not about you. This is about bringing glory and honor to the Lord God of glory.

**WRITE OUT YOUR PLAN OF ATTACK AGAINST A GIANT IN YOUR LIFE
OR WITHIN YOUR CHURCH FELLOWSHIP.**

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Bible Study Helps

- Alden, Robert. Psalms: Vol. 1 Songs of Devotion, Vol. 2 Songs of Dedication, Vol. 3 Songs of Discipleship. Chicago: Moody Press, 1974- 76.
- Allen, James Turney. The First Year of Greek. Toronto, Ontario, Canada: The MacMillan Company, 1931.
- The Analytical Greek Lexicon. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1977.
- Arminius, James. The Works of Arminius, 3 vols. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1996.
- Barnes, Charles Randall, Ed., Melvin G. Kyle. The People's Bible Encyclopedia. Chicago: The People's Publication Society, 1924.
- Berry, George Ricker. A Dictionary of New testament Greek Synonyms. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1979.
- Bruce, Alexander Balmain. Apologetics on Christianity Defensively Stated. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1910.
- Carlson, E. Leslie. Elementary Hebrew. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1945.
- Children of the Bible. Chicago: The Bible Institute Colportage Association, date unknown.
- Christman, D. Grant. Instant Bible Reference Book. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press of Kansas City, 1967.
- Clarke, Adam. Commentary on the Holy Bible. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press of Kansas City, 1967.
- Crooks, George R., John F. Hurst. Library Biblical and Theological Literature: Vol. II Biblical Hermeneutics. New York: Hurt & Eaton, 1893.
- Cruden, Alexander. Cruden's Complete Concordance to the Old and New Testaments. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1975.
- Culbertson, Paul T. Contemporary Portraits From the Old Testament. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press of Kansas City, 1973.
- Curry, S. S. Vocal and Literary Interpretation of the Bible. Boston: The Expression Company, 1903.
- Daniels, W. H., Ed. Moody: His Words, Works, and Workers. New York: Nelson & Phillips, 1878.
- Englishman's Greek New Testament. London, England: Samuel Bagster and Sons, Ltd, date unknown.
- Exell, Joseph S. The Biblical Illustrator. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Book House, 1955.
- Fausset, A. R. Bible Cyclopaedia. Hartford, Connecticut: The S. S. Scranton Company, 1916.
- Field, Benjamin, John C. Symons. A Student's Handbook of Christian Theology. New York: Eaton & Mains, 1887.
- Green, Jay P. Sr. The Interlinear Bible. Peabody, Massachusetts: Hendrickson Publishers,

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

1976.

Green, Thomas Sheldon. A Greek-English Lexicon to the New Testament. London, England: Samuel Bagster & Sons LTD, Date Unknown.

Hills, A. M. Homiletics and Pastoral Theology. Kansas City, Missouri: Nazarene Publishing House, 1929.

Davidson, Benjamin. The Analytical Hebrew and Chaldee Lexicon. Peabody, Massachusetts: Hendrickson Publishers, 1992.

DePuy, I. N., J. B. Travis. Outline Studies in Biblical Facts and History. New York: Association Press, 1908.

Dods, Marcus. An Introduction to the New Testament. New York: Thomas Whittaker, 1892.

Greathouse, William M., Ed. Beacon Bible Expositions, 12 vols. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press of Kansas City, 1983.

Halley, Henry H. Pocket Bible Handbook: An Abbreviated Bible Commentary. Chicago: Henry H. Halley, 1948.

Hebrew - English Lexicon. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1976.

Henry, Matthew. Commentary on the Whole Bible. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1977.

Huddilston, John Homer. Essentials of New Testament Greek. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1905.

The Interlineary Hebrew English Psalter. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1977.

John, I. N., J. F. Kempfer. The Parallel Gospels and Reference Passages. Sunbury, Pennsylvania: The Alpha Publishing Co., 1896.

Kent, Charles Foster. The Work and Teachings of the Apostles. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1916.

Kinnaman, J. O. Out of the Dust. Long Beach, California: Bureau of Bible Research, 1945.

Mattison, Hiram. The Doctrine of the Trinity: A Check to Modern Arianism. New York: Carlton & Phillips, 1855.

Miley, John. Systematic Theology, 2 vols. Peabody, Massachusetts: Hendrickson Publishers, 1989.

The New Topical Textbook. Minneapolis, Minnesota: World Wide Publications, date unknown.

Morrish, George. A Concordance of the Septuagint. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1979.

Myers, F. B. Samuel the Prophet. New York: Fleming H. Revell Company, date unknown.

The Open Bible, Expanded Edition, New King James Version. Nashville, Tennessee: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1985.

Purkiser, W. T., Ed. Exploring Our Christian Faith. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1960.

Purkiser, W. T., Richard S Taylor, Willard H Taylor. God, Man, & Salvation. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press of Kansas City, 1977.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

- Purkiser, W. T. Know Your Old Testament. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1947.
- Ralston, Thomas N. Elements of Divinity. Nashville, Tennessee: Abingdon-Cokesbury Press, 1924.
- Rogers, Robert William. Great Characters of the Old Testament. Nashville, Tennessee: LaMar & Barton, 1920.
- Samuel Bagster and Sons, Ltd., London. The Hebrew - English Old Testament. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1976.
- The Septuagint. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1975.
- Sloan, W. W. A Survey of the Old Testament. New York: Abingdon Press, 1957.
- Smith, William. A Dictionary of the Bible. Chicago: The John C. Winston Company, 1884.
- Souter, Alexander. A Pocket Lexicon to the Greek New Testament. Oxford, England: The Clarendon Press, 1948.
- Strong, James. The Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible. Nashville, Tennessee: Holman Bible Publishers, date unknown.
- Thayer, Joseph Henry. Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1972.
- Vine, W. E. An Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words. Old Tappan, New Jersey: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1966.
- Wesley, John. The Works of John Wesley, 3rd Ed, 7 vols. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Baker Books, 1996.
- Wesley, John. Select Psalms. New York: Eaton & Mains, 1891.
- Weston, Sidney A. The Prophets and the Problems of Life. Chicago: The Pilgrim Press, 1932.
- Whiston, William, Translator. Josephus Complete Works. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Kregel Publications, 1978.
- Wiley, H. Orton, Paul T. Culbertson. Christian Theology, 4 vols. Kansas City Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1964.
- Wiley, H. Orton. The Epistle to the Hebrews. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1959.
- Wilson, George M., Kenneth N. Taylor. Words of Wisdom From Living Psalms and Proverbs. Minneapolis, Minnesota: World Wide Publications, 1967.
- Young, Robert. Analytical Concordance to the Bible. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, date unknown.

Christian Church History Helps

- Buckley, James M. History of Methodism, 2 vols. New York: Harper & Brothers Publishers, 1898.
- Hurst, John Fletcher. Short History of the Christian Church. New York: Harper & Brothers Publishers, 1892.
- Hurst, John Fletcher. History of the Christian Church, 2 vols. New York: Eaton & Mains, 1897.
- Qualben, Lars P. A History of the Christian Church. New York: Thomas Nelson and Sons, 1958.

Living a Holy Life in an Unholy World

- Benner, Hugh C. Rendezvous With Abundance. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1958.
- Bounds, E. M. Preacher and Prayer. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1946.
- Brockett, Henry E. Scriptural Freedom From Sin. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1951.
- Bunyan, John. The Pilgrim's Progress. Uhrichsville, Ohio: Barbour and Company, Inc., date unknown.
- Chapman, James B. Christian Living in a Modern World. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1942.
- Corlett, D. Shelby. The Meaning of Holiness. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1944.
- Farrar, Frederic W. The Life of Christ. New York: A. L. Burt Company, Publishers, date unknown.
- Finney, Charles G. Revival Lectures. New York: Fleming H. Revell Company, date unknown.
- Fleetwood, John. Life of Christ. Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Bradley, Garretson & Co., 1874.
- Fletcher, John. Checks to Antinomianism, 2 vols. New York: Phillips & Hunt, date unknown.
- Foxe, John. Foxe's Christian Martyrs of the World. Chicago: Moody Press, date unknown.
- Havner, Vance. Living in Kingdom Come. Westwood, New Jersey: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1967.
- Hills, A. M. Holiness and Power for the Church and the Ministry. Cincinnati, Ohio: Revivalist Office, 1896.
- Hills, A. M. Life of Charles G. Finney. Cincinnati, Ohio: Office of "God's Revivalist," 1902.
- Huntington, D. W. C. Sin and Holiness: What it is to Be Holy. Cincinnati: Curts & Jennings, 1898.
- Jessop, Harry E. Foundations of Doctrine in Scripture and Experience. Chicago: The Chicago Evangelistic Institute, 1938.
- Jessop, Harry E. The Ministry of Prevailing Prayer. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1941.
- Jones, E. Stanley. Growing Spiritually. New York: Abingdon Press, 1953.
- Jones, E. Stanley. The Way. Nashville, Tennessee: Abingdon Press, 1946.
- Lowrey, Asbury. Possibilities of Grace. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1951.
- Moffett, Robert. Seeking the Old Paths and Other Sermons. Cleveland, Ohio: Published by the author, 1899.
- Morgan, G. Campbell. The Ten Commandments. New York: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1901.
- Parrott, Leslie. Perspectives in Bible Holiness. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press of Kansas City, 1968.
- Pearse, Mark Guy. Thoughts on Holiness. Chicago: The Christian Witness Co., 1884.
- Purkiser, W. T. Conflicting Concepts of Holiness: Some Current Issues in the Doctrine of Sanctification. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1964.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

- Rice, John R. Prayer: Asking and Receiving. Murfreesboro, Tennessee: Sword of the Lord Publishers, 1970.
- Shaw, S. B. Old Time Religion. Chicago: S. B. Shaw, Publisher, 1904.
- Simpson, A. B. Wholly Sanctified. New York: The Christian Alliance Pub. Co., date unknown.
- Speer, Robert E. The Principles of Jesus Applied to Some Questions of Today. New York: Fleming H. Revell Company, 1902.
- Tenney, Tommy, The God Chasers. Shippensburg, Pennsylvania: Destiny Image Publishers, Inc., 1998.
- Tidwell, W. M. Dressed-up Sin and Other Sermons. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1951.
- Turner, George Allen. The Vision Which Transforms: Is Christian Perfection Scriptural? Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1964.
- Watson, William. Prayer. Cincinnati, Ohio: Jennings and Graham, date unknown.
- Wilkes, A. Paget. The Dynamic of Faith. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1943.
- Wilkes, A. Paget. The Dynamic of Redemption: The Blood of Jesus. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1946.
- Wilkes, A. Paget. The Dynamic of Service. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1944.
- Wood, A. Skevington. Life by the Spirit. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan Publishing House, 1965.
- Wood, J. A. Perfect Love. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press, 1944.

Philosophy Helps

- Cornford, Francis MacDonald. The Republic of Plato. New York: Oxford University Press, 1963.
- Davidson, Robert F. Philosophies Men Live By. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1964.
- James, William. Pragmatism. Cleveland, Ohio: Meridian books, 1964.
- Kant, Immanuel. Fundamental Principles of the Metaphysic of Morals. New York: The Bobbs-Merrill Company, Inc., 1949.
- Kierkegaard, Soren. Purity of Heart Is To Will One Thing. New York: Harper & Row, Publishers, 1948.
- Ostwald, Martin. Nicomachean Ethics: Aristotle. New York: The Bobbs- Merrill Company, Inc., 1962.
- Runes, Dagobert D, Ed. Dictionary of Philosophy. Paterson, New Jersey: Littlefield, Adams & Co., 1962.
- Titus, Harold H. Ethics For Today, 3rd Edition. New York: American Book Company, 1957.

Science Study Helps

- DeMar, Gary. God and Government: A Biblical and Historical Study, 3 vols. Atlanta, Georgia:

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

American Vision Press, 1984.

Hand, John Raymond. Why I Accept the Genesis Record: An Answer to Evolution. Lincoln, Nebraska: Back to the Bible Broadcast, 1959.

Fredrick, Laurence, Robert H. Baker. An Introduction to Astronomy. New York: D. Van Nostrand Company, 1974.

Kahane, Howard. Logic and Contemporary Rhetoric: The Use of Reason in Everyday Life. Belmont, California: Wadsworth Publishing Company, Inc., 1976.

Little, Winston W. W. Harold Wilson, W. Edgar Moore. Applied Logic. Cambridge, Massachusetts: The Riverside Press, 1955.

Marion, Jerry B. Physics: The Foundation of Modern Science. New York: John Wiley & Sons, Inc., 1973.

Morris, Henry M. The Remarkable Birth of Planet Earth. Minneapolis, Minnesota: Bethany House Publishers, 1978.

Pierce, Conway, R. Nelson Smith. General Chemistry Workbook: How to Solve Chemistry Problems. San Francisco, California: W. H. Freeman and Company, 1971.

Steidl, Paul M. The Earth, The Stars, and The Bible. Phillipsburg, New Jersey: Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Company, 1979.

Sunderland, Luther D. Darwin's Enigma: Fossils and Other Problems. Santee, California: Master Book Publishers, 1984.

White, Harvey E. Modern College Physics. Princeton, New Jersey: D. Van Nostrand Company, Inc., 1959.

Wood, Nathan R. The Secret of the Universe: "God, Man and Matter". Grand Rapids, Michigan: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1955.

"Science, Falsely So-Called" First Expressed, Then Repressed

Ferguson, Marilyn. The Aquarian Conspiracy: Personal and Social Transformation in the 1980s. Los Angeles, California: J. P. Tarcher, Inc, 1980.

Giberson, Karl. Worlds Apart: The Unholy War Between Religion & Science. Kansas City, Missouri: Beacon Hill Press of Kansas City, 1993.

Gould, Stephen Jay. I Have Landed: The End of a Beginning in Natural History. New York, New York: Harmony Books, 2002.

Pike, Alfred. Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry. Charleston: Southern Jurisdiction of the United States, 1871 and 1901.

Barton, David. Original Intent: The Courts, The Constitution, & Religion. Aledo, Texas: WallBuilder Press, 1996.

Colson, Charles, Nancy R. Pearcey. A Dance With Deception: Revealing the Truth Behind the Headlines. Dallas, Texas: Word Publishing, 1993.

Jones, Peter. Spirit Wars: Pagan Revival in Christian America. Mukiteo, Washington: WinePress Publishing and Escondido, California: Main Entry Edition, 1997.

Michaelsen, Johanna. Like Lambs to the Slaughter: Your Child and the Occult. Eugene, Oregon: Harvest house Publishers, 1989.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

Savard, Liberty S. Shattering Your Strongholds: Freedom From Your Struggles. North Brunswick, New Jersey: Bridge-Logos Publishers, 1992.

Riplinger, G. A. New Age Bible Versions. Ararat, Virginia: AV Publications Corporation, 1993.

Material For Further Study in Immune System Health

Dr. Lorraine Day, MD. Video Series. Rockford Press P.O. Box 8 Thousand Palms CA 92276
Telephone: 1-800-574-2436.

Dr. Norman W. Walker D. Sc. Norwalk Press P.O. Box 12260 Prescott AZ 86304.

Dr. George H. Malkmus. Why Christians Get Sick and others. Treasure House P.O. Box 310 Shippensburg PA 17257.

The Cancer Answer by Albert E. Carter Telephone: 1-800-232-5762

Website for the rebounder. <http://www.NeedakRebounders.com>.

There are many books on food preparation you can find in your health store. The materials listed above have several references in them for further study.

A Good Website For Unlimited Energy Development

The Tom Bearden Website at www.cheniere.org.

Endnotes for 7 Steps out of Bondage into God's Glorious Freedom

1. Stephen Jay Gould died from cancer May 20, 2002. His book I Have Landed: The End of a Beginning in Natural History was published May 21, 2002.
- 2 Read Psalm 147:5; Proverbs 3:19; Isaiah 40:28; Jeremiah 51:15.
- 3 Read Isaiah 11:1-9; 61:1-3.
- 4 Read Psalm 37; Proverbs 12.
- 5 Read Habakkuk 2:14.
- 6 Read 2 Corinthians 11:13-15.
- 7 Read Psalm 14.
- 8 Read 1 Corinthians 3:6-15.
- 9 Read Genesis 1 and 2.
- 10 Read Hebrews 11:3.
- 11 Read John 1:1-18; 3:16, 17.
- 12 Read Proverbs 3:5-7.
- 13 Read the Book of Ephesians.
- 14 Read Galatians 5:22, 23.
- 15 Read Matthew 5:1-16; 2 Corinthians 5:17-21.
- 16 Read Hebrews 11.
- 17 Read Galatians 6:10; Ephesians 4:29-32.
- 18 Read Psalm 104:1.
- 19 Read Proverbs 3:16; 4:8; 15:33.
- 20 Read Proverbs 21:21.
- 21 Read Galatians 6:7, 8.
- 22 Read Romans 2:5-11.
- 23 Read Romans 12:10.
- 24 Read 1 Timothy 1:17.
- 25 Read 1 Thessalonians 5:12, 13.
- 26 Read 1 Peter 2:11, 12.
- 27 Read 1 Timothy 6:16.
- 28 Read 1 Peter 2.
- 29 Read Revelation 4:11.
- 30 Read Revelation 5:12.
- 31 Read Revelation 5:13.
- 32 Read Revelation 7:12.
- 33 Read Revelation 19:1.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies

AUTHOR'S BIOS



The author, Howard Eugene Wright, has pastored several American churches for 36 years until he retired in 2001.

He has been a missionary to the North American Indians. He and his wife are supporting a radio broadcast in Uganda, East Africa. He helped organize a Christian Workers Conference in Uganda. He taught high school chemistry while pastoring in North Dakota, has had many upper-level studies in the sciences, has spoken on special creation and the flood in his University of Minnesota geology classes in 1976. He graduated from the University of Minnesota with a Bachelor's Degree in Small-Group Speech-Communications with minors in Earth Sciences and Biological Sciences. He also has earned a Master's Degree in Christian Clinical Therapy Counseling from Cornerstone University.

He attends a Christian fellowship weekly with his lovely wife, Arlene Roller Wright. They are happily married for almost 12 years after their companions of many years died in 1995.

Now this man who has knowledge both in religion and science has been inspired by the True and Living God of Glory to revise his "Deceitful Masters" book with a new title, "7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom" and format.

His books show you the love and compassion he has for everyone. His intimate love for God and others has given him a great concern for this generation. He has a driving passion to help others come to the same peaceful, loving, personal relationship with his Creator God that he has had since 1 January 1956.

7 Steps to God's Glorious Freedom

His “*God's Treasure Chest of Biblical Truth*” are as follows:

1. Fourteen Facets of Jesus' True Church: Preparing Humanity for God's Eternal Kingdom.
2. The Church That Satan's Slave Built: The Enemies of Jesus' True Church Exposed.
3. God's Operation Manual For Spiritual Warfare: Strategies and Principle Used For Victorious Christian Living.
4. God's Prescriptions for a Healthy Society: Back to the Garden of Eden for Physical and Spiritual Renewal.

He is in the process of writing more volumes for this series.

You can get these books from Amazon.com or through his ministry website at: www.International-Lighthouse-Ministries.com.

Focusing the Word of Truth
on the Raging Sea of Treacherous Lies